

Equilibrium - Across Heaven and Hell

Todd M. Anderson

Published by Todd M. Anderson, 2026.

This is a work of fiction. Similarities to real people, places, or events are entirely coincidental.

EQUILIBRIUM - ACROSS HEAVEN AND HELL

First edition. August 29, 2026.

Copyright © 2026 Todd M. Anderson.

ISBN: 979-8235738300

Written by Todd M. Anderson.

Also by Todd M. Anderson

Equilibrium - Across Heaven and Hell

Art Gallery
New Jerusalem

Reflections on Faith

Believe
Connections
Garden of Harmonies
King and Prophet
Kingdom Building
Light Scholars
Never Give In
Paradise
Personality Program
Super Conscious
The Light and Filament
The Way of Man
Universal Records

Theater of Everyday Life

Mirrors for Reflection

The Anti-Personality

The Battle Between Good and Evil

Competitive

Angelic Wisdom

Trumpets Calling

Conversion of a Sinner

Angelic Identity

Standalone

Reflections on Faith

Theater of Everyday Life : A Christian Perspective

Equilibrium - Across Heaven and Hell

Little Flame of the Holy Spirit Meditation

In our prayerful communication with the heavens, a little flame is thrown down from the heavens into the heart. And for those who seek to bring sanctification to the hearts of others afflicted by evil by praying on their behalf, this meditation may be useful. For it takes powerful control to prevent evil from occurring in the world. And to remove it. However, even the good and holy people might accuse God of not listening if their prayers are not answered. This meditation therefore offers a way to ask God, the Almighty and Merciful, for His assistance in answering your peaceful prayers without attempting to control the situation yourself. For it is God's intervention that we seek in answer to our prayers to affect the lives of others. And He will answer in a way that only they will understand.

All prayer starts with an awakening in the heart. But within the heart, the evil is known to hide in darkness. Through prayer, we seek protection from and removal of that darkness by asking the Heavenly Father to intervene in the souls of others. The darkness will fight to maintain power, but when the little flame of the Holy Spirit ignites the hearts of those who are spiritually aware, the heavenly angels will begin to answer these prayers according to God's will.

To begin the meditation, open the palms of your hands to signify that you are not in control of what you hold onto so tightly. And in releasing power and control, ask the heavens to send down the little flame of the Holy Ghost to enter

the hearts of those afflicted by evil. And, upon seeing the Holy Trinity, ask God for this little flame of the Holy Spirit to enter the afflicted hearts in the name of the Lord. For it is in this manner that the Holy Spirit shall be introduced into their lives through a spiritual vision.

And in this meditation, leave open your hands, heart, and mind to the Holy Trinity, as you ask for grace. And leave it to the heavens' promise, as you continue to offer your love to those who need your help. And in this way, you will serve the church.

We cannot prevent evil from occurring on our own, but only stoke the promises of the Holy Ghost in the hearts of others. For we share in the divinity of the Lord Jesus Christ by our obedience in his Father's creation story. And with the guidance of the Holy Ghost, we share the love, light, and laughter of the Lord.

NEW JERUSALEM

Section One

The Evolution of My Belief System and the Lord Christ in My Life (+,+)

Chapter One

In the fight against the evil one, Jesus Christ was with me. There, surrounding, throughout, and within me; anywhere there was evil tempting me with lies and deceit. And in myself, I saw the dragon.

The dragon convinced itself that all men and women have opposite natures and that the balance of symmetry was the only right word in the world. In such a world, the correct stance is held by all those men and women who see themselves as non-religious, and no one in the temples, mosques, or churches has any right to declare a war of spirituality on them.

However, for those who have suffered trial and judgment for their religion, their wisdom was imparted upon them by Jesus Christ, through his trial. For the Word flowed out in spirit for the noble-minded and brave-hearted, revealed in a holy sacrament to the unified churchgoers.

As the different religions slowly merged before the dragon, it protested in fear of the churchgoers' judgment. For the unified church was built of people who had no tolerance for evil, and these people were standing their ground against the rebellious.

The dragon kept interrupting the trial to shake everyone's feet off the path of Jesus Christ and to keep all eyes on itself.

But when I turned to look inside myself, I finally saw that dragon for what it was. It collected the thoughts and actions of a group of people that was, in reality, a political

leviathan. And in that political order, it directed its lies and deceit at those who believed they were acting in the new age of mankind.

The dragon spoke frequently, and it spoke aloud to men and women, claiming that what was good was to eradicate the church as it unified. It said that to split and believe in what was evil was a purer form of living.

And so, the women tempted men. And the men tempted women. Their hearts raced with excitement as the world expedited a customary culture of non-faith. Hostility toward religion rose in the minds of all in society and flipped on itself until the reality of the dragon was in the conscious behavior and then the subconscious acts of all humanity. The trajectory of the earth then shifted so that it would be flipped by a magnetism so pure that the world would be engulfed in flames as high as the length from the center of the earth to its mantle.

As the evil moved from the consciousness to the subconscious, the people slumbered while it spoke in their stead. It spoke on behalf of conscious minds, tempting others to join in the pursuit of luring the holy and noble churchgoers away, to become a part of its collective. This was the spirit of Satan's plans. The women would become wary of the judgment of the church and split from it. Because no one wants to be judged. And antagonism toward religion rose in the hearts of men, because their bodies were controlled by the subconscious.

The world was a nightmare for those who fought back to develop in the heart an intuitive understanding of the temptations of Satan. And it became understood that those evil

people who collected and formed the leviathan were demons sent to curse the church. The spirits of the damned raced through others, and the good and holy hearts felt the presence of evil around them. The spirit of Satan was good at manipulation, and he searched in the shadows to find the people who would hide from the light, those with cursed hearts, who would become part of the collective.

Within that wicked heart of Satan, he curses the demons and encourages the evil in their subconscious. Deep down in the hearts of a few people, the wicked have taken possession of them. And their minds obeyed the commands of the devils, delivering torment upon others.

There in my own thoughts, trying to engage in spiritual conversation and anticipate what in the world I was stepping toward, there was silence. And from deep in my soul, there was an announcement – that the devil was present in me. And, as I was broken, I would need to understand that the living Spirit gives the Holy Ghost the power to engage in conversation with Satan.

There was a piece within me that required examination. Because of this piece, I was used by and useful to those on both sides, as they would strategize how to determine which judgment fit my conversation as Jesus maneuvered me along across the board.

Jesus was felt through the Holy Spirit. He anticipated and announced the fall of my grace. And he protected my soul as I prepared to walk in society as someone who announced his story repeatedly for the benefit of other people. As it became clear that I was helping other people begin to feel his love, I knew that I was merely offering grace on a su-

perfidious level. However, as I used his name in my prayers and let myself be useful to the Holy Ghost, I could conquer any apprehension of what may occur by leaving myself open to allowing the spirit to move me.

Therefore, in the game where the devils conquer souls to outmaneuver the heavenly divine, the heavenly angels in this world began to offer me help, showing me how to recognize the devils' moves. Through their tricks of illusions and deceit, the devils would access the knowledge of myself and others in my memories, and they would learn my weaknesses. In this way, they would understand how my soul could be tormented. It was the same, it was insisted, that I was trying to impose on non-religious people who felt they were being shamed.

The Holy Ghost would therefore speak through the heart to reveal the deceit, helping me to manage myself in a match of skill and bravery. And the games would begin in the throes of the drama and chaos of my surroundings in life. Fully enveloped by layers upon layers of unbearable noise and heat, I reached out for the living water of faith that offered my redemption through the Savior.

It was, in fact, peer pressure that moved the leviathan – the driving engine of society. This was the way people formally adapted to curses. And as the strength and status of the devils grew, the distance grew between non-religious people and the holy church, as they turned against it. The snake appears in many forms and carries many meanings, including a metaphor that explains how the devils forged the chains of the non-religious. They would pass from person to person through their hearts, which was a way to keep people en-

slaved by jumping or hopping into the darkness of another when people began to understand where their temptations stemmed from. Within the people who were cursed and possessed were devils speaking loudly. But their actions were in pursuit of building a stronghold, and they prepared to make a play for power.

As I concentrated on listening through the heart, the Holy Ghost said, "Author, the redemption you seek is found through my lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. You shall not offer your opinions about the leviathan unless you are moved to do so. If you remain patient and wait to be called to do so, we shall give you your instructions. And by understanding that the devils mask themselves in the cloak of night, you will understand how shadows encircle the hearts of many.

"The sides of Heaven or Hell are determined as an order of manifestation. Humans simplify the matter of church versus state so much that it gets to the point where your own contentions seem to contradict one another. And yet, in the same breath, you identify with and support both the state and the church, as if your face were on both sides of the same coin. This duplexity is embodied by the Morning Star, the first fallen angel. His light is in all.

"The light you seek from Heaven will be deceptive if it comes through the devils and then the Morning Star, as this allows you to see into his soul."

And the Holy Spirit felt my captivated spirit become tense inside my body. "Be brave, Author. For when this fear occurs within your heart, let me tell you that you are not of evil. As I continue to work through you, I will show you how to identify the light of the Morning Star. You will under-

stand how his light is different from ours. First, let me compare his light versus the spiritual light of the heavenly Son.

“In your heart, you feel an impulse to make decisions for yourself. And if this impulse is caused by pressure brought about by a feeling that you are lacking compared to the people in your surroundings, it is the deception of Satan. The love shared in the spiritual light of the heavens provides a strong foundation for building our individual talents to further his passion.

“Now, that part of your imagination that sustains the leviathan houses a cursed creation of the night. And a nothingness, devoid of empathy or consciousness, reflects the nighttime sky. Those who listen to the worldly news and harbor the devil’s vision within the shadows of their hearts encourage the movement that represents a collective effort to eradicate the cultural norm of embracing a spiritual life and following Jesus Christ.

“As science moves us to understand our world on a deeper level, the leviathan will ask all who curse people of faith to understand their weaknesses and to work them into their storylines. Those whose hearts are buried in shadows are tempted to exploit those wanting to hear and understand their conscience in the heart, and because of that unfairness, and because of their weaknesses, the religious will falter. And after they falter, they will be rebuilt in embarrassment because they felt the love shared by Jesus.

“Author, those on the other side of the conversation argue that the religious punish those who judge or pressure them. However, on pace to outduel the sorcery of evil of a collective mindset, the heavenly angels step in to protect the

pious and silence the evil devils. And even after that humiliation, the evil walk away confidently, as if they believe that their storylines prove they still are, in fact, superior at planning their games of conquest over weak souls.”

The Holy Ghost continued, “Jesus will protect you from this, but realize that not accepting his grace would lead to your fall. If you feel the need to match the energy and anger of evil people, then your fall will be due to the temptation and shame you accept rather than accepting the love of Jesus. And that acceptance of weakness is an acceptance of awkwardness because it shows that you put yourself before God as you fight against your own weaknesses. And this allows the tempters to enjoy their competitive games that much more.

“Author, the church is a safe haven for people who want to grow close to my love. Through the Holy Spirit, these people will grow in their communication with God the Father and His beloved Son, Jesus Christ. However, as you understand, there needs to be protection for those in the church and in society at large, and this protection is offered by the angels.

“You are getting ready to go out into the world, into a society where others are tempted frequently. And in that world of war, lust, materialism, and cultural acceptance of secularism, you will know hatred and punishment for walking with me, the Holy Ghost. And it will take strength to refuse to tolerate sin. If you allow sin in your life, however, then understand that God will still offer His grace, if you offer your penance.

“Author, you will step out of the heart’s chamber now. We in the heavens have held you back, in spirit, to learn of the torment that will ensue, but now we will let you out into the fiery chaos. The strength of your knowledge will only get you so far, but then you will be acknowledged in the world as someone on the side of good.

“Let the Lord accept your penance for your sinful thoughts and actions, as these were tests of the moral consciousness designed by the worldly Morning Star. May you examine the worldly people who question how power comes forth from your tongue as you share the love of Christ. And let the shadow devils begin their games with you. For in this life of deceit is torment, suffered by the world that perceives lies as truth. And when you right the wrongs and fight the impulse to engage in conversation with others only to prove yourself as right, you will understand that people only follow one master. The spiritual war in society is just one place where this confrontation occurs. The game will be played all around you, as those who do not believe in a spiritual connection to the heavens will attack the heavenly realm. But you will demystify the truth. The riddles in life will be understood by the devils, astonishing them as they change their minds. And Satan will be cast out by each person who understands the spiritual truth, the justice and fairness of the loving embrace of Jesus Christ.”

Chapter Two

“Author!” A fiery, tormented scream rang out in my head, startling me. “You will come to learn the ways of Jesus Christ, as the angelic being inside your soul is the actualization of your desires to follow the Lord, as the Holy Spirit works through you. The soul you have is in Heaven. And from the heavens, it looks out upon a pool of troubled waters. The emotions you harbor stem from your refusal to accept that the things you promised in life were deemed to be worthless by others. Your pride fuels your desire for their acceptance and influences what you project. However, the projection of your soul, when you see your desires fulfilled only to be met with disappointment and weakness, is part of a grander design than you are able to understand.”

The fiery voice came from the soul of my father, who had passed from the world years ago. In memories of him, I saw myself trying to accept his love and advice. Largely, though, I ignored his advice, and then I blamed my family when I felt the torture that was brought on by my own misgivings or weaknesses.

It was difficult to accept my father’s admonitions because, I suppose, I did not want to hear my faults listed out loud or examined under a microscope. But as I turned a deaf ear to his words, I slept in ignorance of his love. And, as he stubbornly maintained his mentality in his lifetime, the time in life I shared with him was good, but also ridiculously ironic.

“Irony is not the word I would choose,” said my father, who has passed. “I would respond to your laziness with a measure of disappointment, as it was clear that you took pride in your ambitions. And when you failed to achieve them, you pouted like a child. You were a sad story. And like the rest of the sad stories, you wanted your excuses to be heard. You wanted to explain why it went wrong in the hopes of picking up the chain of reasoning and going back to being a slave to that particular goal once more.

“I was not afraid to discipline you. But I figured that if you ignored my advice, then why would my discipline be any better for you? You would shut down further. So, I kept you in my thoughts, contemplating what I could do for you instead of punishment.”

After lingering within my heart a moment longer, I stepped back to relax and focus on understanding this lesson. Then I redirected my awareness toward my own thoughts and actions, preparing to accept the fear of defeat.

And my father, who has passed, spoke once more. “Yes, and you were responsible for many of your losses, as you would get in your own way. But when sharing these defeats with others, you said that you felt victimized. You shared your misgivings with open appreciation for feedback. But you accepted all those who agreed with your position in the story, and anyone who saw things differently, you viewed as evil or hurtful, even though they were just giving the honest feedback you requested. I tried to protect those you cursed back then as you ignored the perspectives they offered, just like you did to me. I gave them credit then, and they are still in my thoughts now.”

The memories he described from his perspective drew me back into my heart. And, as I realized that I reminded him of myself from these memories still, that I looked the same, from his point of view, I slowly began to falter. I realized that my shield of ignorance that covered me like a shadow was really a veil that covered the devils that tormented me.

My late father then said, "I know you were not expecting this situation in death and the afterlife. But you are currently held in limbo. The shadows that follow you are self-made. You shaped your own thoughts and displaced your ignorant emotional values, directing your anger at the ones who corrected any of your errors. You feared this, and you hoped for them to fail, just as they failed you in conversations in your life."

I called out for the Holy Ghost to shine spiritual light in my heart to illuminate and reveal this pattern of deceit I was experiencing once more between my spirit and body, the channel through which I have projected and manifested my life from Heaven into this purgatory. Then I began to accept that my ignorance was, in fact, a shift from when I started giving in to the temptation to curse others without hesitation or reflection, and it built on these experiences to the present. I recognized that the recurring patterns of my own self-harm and the karmic reactions, actualized in my surroundings by my subconscious, had cyclical timing, like other events in life.

The fiery voice of my father said, "You were only ignoring part of my message to you. You just took and accepted some measure of your own guilt. But the shame you shared

was not rooted in your own behaviors. In fact, you began to address your morality in your soul, along with the Holy Spirit. And for that, I am happy for you.”

The message I heard was that my opinions had not been sound. And in a brief moment, after listening to my father and sharing the emotional charge that was delivered via impulses and sound in my heart, his words became lessons to live by.

I began to think out loud. And I began to question the progression of living in fear, as I worked through my thoughts, trying to identify the beginning of these behavior patterns so that I could figure out how to correct them.

“You need to ask for help,” my fiery father continued. “You know little of the devil you are controlled by. He is an embarrassment to you. And once you understand how this purgatory is a cell of an imagined life, you will begin to unblock yourself and escape to true knowledge. For that, though, you must follow the Holy Spirit.”

My father, who has passed, continued, “Toward the left side of your living cell are the hellish caverns that you seek to understand. By continuing in this pursuit, you will remain in ignorance, keeping yourself blocked from the truth. And as you gain an understanding through listening and watching, you will see how to manipulate the patterns in the storyline, which is being influenced by the people in your surroundings. This theater taking place around you is the drama in life, which will continue as they see unresolved weaknesses. Those characters in that drama are revealed with each passing moment, as time is cyclical. Your patterns have not

changed, and the characters presented inside you by the evil one will continue to manifest.

“If you look upward though, you can understand me, your father, in passing. That is, in my understanding of your experiences and our family history, I will carry insights, much like how the memory of logic is captured within a book. It is reasonable to assume that I play as much of a part as you do in figuring out how to guide you in the trials of this life. You will develop your moral decision-making abilities and your understanding as you are guided.

“Toward the right side of your living cell, on the other hand, are the genetic markers describing the sequences from which you were made. The lineage is of Adam. And thus, in your storyline is that fall from grace. It happens to be by the Heavenly Father’s left hand as He faces you from above. And in that storyline, you are a character on trial.

“There is a character below you, who you will understand as your mother. Your earthly mother is one who is in your heart. She guides you as you make your decisions. A real and authentic being, selfless and purer than you have been, she guides you. Where I may guide you and collect your ideas in a book of your life, she will protect the people in your surroundings. She will wish for their best and show them compassion, as she is able to watch their surroundings open up to them and translate their spiritual light into an understanding of the world, in which you are forgiven for your transgressions.

“But son, there is a being that lives and breathes in your surroundings, a subject of demonic transfiguration, and this being is fierce. And in that entity, which passes itself off as

a being of light, is a reminder that there are also angels who were once cursed in your history but who belong now to your savior in Heaven. Learn to plead your morality to the Lord, and you will find that there can be a reprieve when the sacred and holy intervene.”

My fiery father assumed the worst about the characters who occupied my purgatory. He asked if these souls were trying to reach out from the darkness, through the door in my heart, toward the surroundings. “My son, there is a watchful being in place now, who is aware of your perspective and your understanding of the torment I put you through. I called out for a character with the ability to understand and reflect on your life with constancy.

“It is time for you to understand the duality of this character now. The left side is the devil. And that side of the character can be your opposition. The right side is the worldly leader, who you can watch get crushed by the world. The punishments of your memory, the ignorance of the curses on your life by you and me, are revealed not only through interpretation, but also through the satisfaction of this character as your partner.

“And through the trials that I cursed and uncursed you with, you will understand why we live in humanity. This world around you is not as real as you might assume. It is of a spiritual light, a manifestation. And in memory of your book of life, you will sense and interpret through intuition our curses together as you recall your mother’s and my advice.”

Then the Lord appeared through the Holy Ghost, behind my fiery father in the heavens. He moved into a spot

and took a form that could be described as a set of fiery eyes that watch over me. And I thought to myself that those eyes, reflected in my soul, become less visible in the light of natural sensemaking. However, I continually saw these eyes of the Lord in my soul's vision. That in my soul, behind my back, were the fiery eyes, ever watchful throughout my history. So that the background of my character, my human form, came to represent my past. And in front of me, a projection of understanding which brought others to a door to my castle or spiritual mansion.

My father said, in that voice full of fire, "There are three dimensions in which you are involved and encased. And in each direction within these dimensions runs a wall of protection that you can hear, see, smell, feel, and taste to understand both the spiritual and natural forms of the light in your life."

From behind me, I saw the fiery eyes of the Lord's watchful spirit. And the Word, manifested through that heavenly interpretation of my history, became a thing of substance. The Lord said, "You are to have a trial for a reason, my child. And through your understanding of your earthly father, the man who raised you, I will give guidance. Through his voice in your memory, you will receive my comments. And as you interpret the voice and memories, you will understand where to begin looking to find the river that divides you from your soul in Heaven. At the intersection of all three axes, those of time and space, onto which you project yourself, there you will find a way to recollect yourself in an identity of mine. My child, through this interpretation, you will understand that my willingness to advance your cause is also, in part, to

protect you from yourself. If you listen to him, I will save you from yourself through your earthly father's guidance.

"So let your mercy and forgiveness for others, through your mother's understanding, provide a reprieve from the torment of the pressure by others to challenge your faith in me. Forgive your motivations then, as your actions today are rooted in memories past and grounded in reliance on my Holy Spirit. That understanding of me as a motivation then forms that intersection where your search will conclude, and you will find your identity. By seeking me in your personal identity, your understanding of your father will be elevated to where mine is, in Heaven.

"Author, memories are mirror-like, which creates a fluid state of understanding reality, and strengthening the will to believe in the Heavenly Father reduces your understanding of the world. The effect of hearing, seeing, smelling, tasting, and feeling the light through your natural senses is that the sensory perception becomes dominant. And in the interpretation of spiritual light, your union with all characters will be reconciled. Even if those characters punish you to the death, it will then fall upon them to understand for themselves what we understood. And though you have given your earthly life to pursue my father using that flawed reasoning, it will be corrected for the evil ones who take your earthly life in karmic patterns in their spiritual understanding.

"You will achieve a spiritual understanding as a martyr in that case, where you will revisit these people who have taken your life, and you will give guidance from the heavens. You will continue the trial of your memory and patterns to determine, through the examination of lifestyle and actions,

whether they were angelic. Much like your fiery father does now. Each person plays out their own character and storyline in these trials, and my creation story is one in union with the heavens. Therefore, in this purgatory, and even in the chambers of Hell, the dominance of me, as your Lord, is clear.

“Author,” said the Lord from behind my body, in that spiritual region which I could intuitively understand, “look toward your left now. And flip this page of your storyline. For I will have heavenly beings, along with your earthly father, who passed, talk you through what to do when you find yourself in certain positions of this trial of life. Your motivation is subject to two masters. Your passion will lead you to follow my history as a spiritual undertaking, but you will be resistant in this caged life, by my doing. The ancestry and involvement of evil are etched into your patterns. Such was the story of creation in which Adam fell. And in the lineage of your family is your undertaking. You have walked through life with this master. It is a personal recognition of Satan within yourself, which you have inherited. And through the memories and karmic patterns in this book of life, you will begin to realize that you must listen to your father’s and mother’s words once more throughout your trial. Your life is a gift in the present from me, your Lord.”

Chapter Three

My stubbornness was, in fact, sustained by my opinions. And those opinions reflected the truth. But they were the opposite of my intentions. My personality, therefore, became an anti-personality. Both systems operated in ways transparent and perceivable in the real world. However, both impacted my subconscious first and then my conscious self later.

My fiery father, who has passed away, was extremely disciplined in this life. Therefore, as he was also accurate and honest when he acknowledged me, it came across as hurtful. For the truth is blind, even when rendering judgment in a trial. And if you are unaware of the trial of life that you are going through, you must be educated by someone who is capable.

My father, who ascended into the heavens a few years ago, then stated this simply. "I understand both sides of death and life. In fact, in life on Earth, the cause of most problems seemed to be when people deviated from their truths. The shadows of ignorance are lived out in an anti-personality. In an awakening from this moral slumber is where you might see me explain your weaknesses, just like in your memory, when you began to gain an awareness of your faults. It was the realization of blame that moved you to act. And in your desire to avoid the pain of self-blame, you hoped and called out for me to falter.

"These curses were what you sought through prayer, both in your words and in the emotions you felt and projected. And throughout your body, you felt this rippling of time

and space as reality shifted. The ripples grew as these curses fueled the drama between you and the people around you in the theater of your daily life.

“Do you understand yet, son, how you were looking for comfort in your own personality, which you put your trust in? And in that pursuit, where you were asked to stay honest to yourself and the Holy Spirit, you faltered in a clear and simple way. You presented yourself as someone purer, yet within, your extreme behavior was darkness.”

The spirit of my fiery father rose high above me, then came closer to me. He dropped down into my guilt and shame. And this masculine energy shifted the burden in my mind from positive to negative.

“Either the head or heart could be dominant in the entertainment of your spirit. And because the spiritual light is blocked from entering your heart by the damned spirits of darkness possessing it, we shall discuss this truth of yours first. Do you understand how the mind is capable of such behavior? And, in reality, where the ignorance of your spiritual subconscious is left to the whims of the spirits that possess it, you will find the temptation of greed and lust overpowering. Therefore, the devil will try to keep possession of the heart, where the truth rests. And you will be easily outmaneuvered.

“My son,” my father called out, “on this axis between Heaven and the Mother Earth, you will find the spirit of your projected reality. Close to the ground you walk on will be the negative, grounding forces of the female energy. And the axis that runs from the spirit to the memory, that part of the plane you project your spirit onto, will be painted. For the darkness will turn to light as you go from the extreme

negative end to the extreme positive end. By shedding these demons, you will see the light and shadows in your anti-personality grow less and less powerful.”

My fiery father watched to see if my shyness would make me walk backward away from this conversation. From my perspective, that would mean changing the subject, or changing opinions to ride new rippling thoughts, and ignoring his words of wisdom.

“Your mother played a part in your life’s trial. Therefore, your mother will give testimony about your responses to the scales in your heart, as will the characters involved in your life’s drama who connected with her.

“Son, the battle between the heart and mind is like the fight between the angels of Heaven and Hell. The scales move each piece of your information from the radiant light and the spiritual light. It is all captured in a book by two neutral guardian angels. And the testimony is read by the one who will render judgment in Heaven at that time.”

From somewhere behind me in the background, the Lord Jesus Christ said, “Author, I am the one who will read your testimony, and the judgment is mine. I changed your master from the evil Satan to the one who is good and holy. I am your savior. I have led you through the heavens, and as you continue to follow the Holy Spirit, you will continue to gain an understanding of my trial.”

Then, Jesus Christ announced that a new axis was going to be explained through a spiritual awareness. The Lord and Savior said, “When I balance the scales of my judgment, you will understand the metaphor for life. The humanity that became possessed due to your curses will be in the left and right

hands of the evil one who tempts you. And as you identify with the cursed one, the devil, the anti-personality will be on the left scale, while the good and holy works recorded in your memories mark the behavior you engaged in for the redemption of the sinners. Through my passion, or what some people call my time of suffering, you will understand the spiritual darkness that blocks your heart. Nevertheless, my angels will be able to be received on the earth through your heart before me. This tips the scale on the side of positivity and clarifies the rationality that comes into you before me at the time of judgment. And I sit in opposition to the world built by the projection of your irrational dreams. The spiritual mansion that has been built is the reality of your own dreams brought to fruition. So much of this advice is actually the rationale you will use during your trial of demons and angels, as you decide whether to focus on materialism or your spiritual identity. You cannot serve only yourself. You can serve me though, by focusing on the rationality in the heart before you build my church.”

The Lord asked for my servitude. From his light and masculinity came the foundations of my spiritual understanding. And from the balancing of those scales will come the neutrality necessary for building his church. Therefore, the Lord’s eyes looked into my heart through a veil of darkness. Light to dark. And the opposition was dark to light, coming from those decisions of intuition to be either cultivated or cured by my masters, though I could not serve two at the same time. My understanding was being projected through my earthly senses, and the slower pace of the senses hindered my understanding, leaving me ignorant about life’s

trials. And what I woke up to as I became aware of the signs in the life before me was a method of shaping the personality by interacting with challenges provided by God to improve my belief system. This realization, this oppositional shift from darkness to light, was in fact a manifestation of angelic identity.

“Author,” said my Lord, “within your heart is an axis of oppositional extremes, running from the right to the left. In my right hand, I understand the devil’s creative pursuits. The Holy Spirit is with you as you face temptations within you, as you confront this creativity, but I carry you, in spirit, with intuitive answers from the heart. And in that intuition are karmic patterns to understand. You understand yourself as good and holy, but you must understand more of yourself than the stories you share with the world.”

The Lord moved backward, further into the spiritual realm beyond the veil behind me. And my fiery father gave counsel again. “Son, in life, there is a demand from peers, pressuring everyone else to join their cultural pursuits. It is a pattern that most people are ignorant of. And if you do not understand the game the dark is playing against the light, you will need to resist the game altogether. Over time, the games and the peer pressure will get you to question your personal understanding of your intuition and self-reliance. And forgiveness for the decisions of your peers in your game will be determined by balancing the scales of the heart.”

Then, my fiery father, who was extremely self-disciplined, said, “Do not ignore my good acts right now, for I do them to protect you. You continue to be swayed by your peers in so many situations, from everyday interactions to

matters of community and state. Their possession of your thoughts is your prison. And within the limited degrees of freedom granted you by the state, you will be governed as a slave.

“The creativity of your spirit, which is expressed through intuition, will be enslaved to the demands of society as you become more materialistic. This pivot away from religion, the transition from church to state, will be grafted onto your oppositional identity. The left side of your inner self is created by the devil. You have given power to the heart in life to manifest its games.

“The order you suggest in politics is a working system, but it is one that completely overlaps the entirety of human existence. One in which the darkness of the heart determines the negativity. And the systems that control you through war and fear will keep you positioned in place on the board game of logic developed by your anti-personalities. You see, son, the political order shapes and shifts to meet your demands. But it is by the direction of anti-personalities because, by conditioning yourself to act and think as one of many, you will turn yourself into a slave for the wrong master. But I will help you chip away at your ignorance.

“The key to understanding a political order is to first get to know the games that are played within the system. You see, there have been many generations of evil ones throughout the history of mankind, going all the way back to the serpent that plagued the Tree of Knowledge in Eden and the brood of vipers that challenged the Lord, Jesus. Adam and Eve played right into the trap of the serpent, as they were followers of God, and the serpent used this against them. But

when God cast out Adam and Eve from the garden for deceiving him, they fell away from Heaven.”

My fiery father then rose and gestured to the left side, pointing at the one who has tempted in this life’s trial. My father said, “You have gone along with his games and allowed him to rework the creativity of your intuition. You knew, logically, that you should follow the light of the Holy Spirit in the heart. But instead, generations of evil karmic patterns culminated, creating an insulating state, which kept you so far away from the light that you still live in slavery to this day.

“The separation of church and state is one of the few political orders that people have manifested into existence. The garden still exists; however, the exponential growth of the species in the universes over time has bred many serpents in the garden of paradise. Taking a more nuanced approach to the separation of church and state, in fact, shows an evolution of mankind and heightened awareness of spirit. Passively accepting this evolution rather than pursuing the difficult spiritual undertakings then manifests that separation as an order in your world. Either you work against yourself in the heart and accept the darkness of a political order of snakes that pursue the gratification of dragons, or you return in bravery to bring back unison and order from chaos.

“The left side figure understands the light of awareness. As you embrace the awareness and engage in the pursuit of bringing order back to the garden, you will recoil from darkness toward light. The awareness of Jesus Christ is the ultimate order. And after returning to the garden once more in reality, his return to the kingdom on Earth will be possible. You can only have one master.”

My fiery father, who I had ignored before in life, went back to his position above me in the heavens. From there, he said, "The crown you wear will remind you which life to stay aware of. You can either take a Christian perspective and follow the Lord and Savior's commandment to love him and your God throughout your life and to love your neighbors as well, or you can stay down in purgatory, submersed in the materialism that enslaves you in your moral slumber. It is the heart's mission to remain passionate over these decisions. It is moral turpitude to blindly accept your sinful nature and repackage it under a new life identity.

"The crown you have now is one of thorns. It is a hard one to understand, because it means your trials in life are elevated, which means you become a victim of others. And in serving the Lord, you will understand that projecting your soul from Heaven into this purgatory or Hell would be like sharing with evil ones the bread and wine that Jesus shared with others, that they may feed and imbibe on his forgiveness. However, in rectifying these sins and the sinful order, which you no longer tolerate, you will begin a new story for everyone in the church.

"Bowling to the crown of an evil master, on the other hand, would allow a possession of your thoughts that would become your prison cell. Fulfillment of the temptations of lust and greed is demanded by the living system of earthly bodily desires. And out of envy or jealousy, the world will attack each other. And the world's game of pulling away from the logic of the Savior will lead to a system without religion, one that separates itself from the betterment of humanity. For the crown of the state is of a different material. It is gold

and encrusted with jewels, so it sparkles upon the head, but it weighs heavily upon the soul. And over time, it will weigh so much that you will endure much worse conditions in your next lifetime in the universe you create through projection.

“Dark karmic patterns come from the fallen angels, while the heavenly ascend along with the living Christ. And between all things is the neutrality of the heart, or at least, the ability to listen to his Word and not to the voice of possession, as that will change the story in life. The lives of all those in the surroundings then hang in this balance. And now you understand that your trial is one of work. The pursuit of flesh or salvation in Christ’s spirit are the possible outcomes we have decided for you. Your impulse to judge your own identity as a fallen or risen angel is merely weakness, but forgiveness is in spirit. And the flesh, being weak, will fall repeatedly into moral slumber. But the need for forgiveness of madness and lust will be eradicated through the acceptance of God’s love.”

My fiery father then cast a beam of spiritual light into my heart from the heavens. “You have received this word through intuitive prayer. It will help you unlock your door and step out into the chaos of the world. And once you’ve gained the right training and experiences, you will come back to this heart of yours. In spiritual darkness no more, you will believe. Your growth will be determined by your effort. Let your angelic identity be formed and informed.

“The chaos of life is created through effort. And the behavior that brings about disorganization is a side effect of accepting yourself as evil. Remember, you will be met through that beam of spiritual light by many angels throughout this

trial of living systems. It is through organization that the mind makes logical sense of its surroundings. And to that end, it motivates you to understand your belief system. If you flip certain polarities, namely the feminine and masculine energies in the heart, the three axes will move around to position you as a moral consciousness. And the soul watching on from Heaven is magnetized. Looking on through the waters that are polluted under the filament, the magnetized soul builds the bond between you and God, from the time when the zygote was formed in the womb to the memories of each conscious living cell within the organic life. And all material in the universes will respond through cause and effect to your will. This undertaking, as it shifts from conscious to subconscious, will prove your soul intact and pure enough to receive the word of the Holy Spirit.

“The awareness of the light of the rising sun leads to the worship of the light of the begotten Son. This is a valuable lesson to live by. However, it is not only your interpretation of free will that occurs there, but also your indecision about whether to acquire more of this spiritual knowledge. Be a scholar then, between both. And choose how to manage your decisions in that light. Be aware of the things around you and the path the devils take in your life, as these can shift and transform an anti-personality viewpoint of yourself. Much like a mirrored universe, the psychology in the mind is worthless if you are dormant in the heart.”

Chapter Four

My fiery father, who has passed, said, “I know you understand what it is to have a brave mentality. You have witnessed amazing revelations in your own heart. And through the results in your surroundings, God presents your rewards. I have confessed inside that cube of time and space that I described, and it is amazing. The three axes were directions on a coordinate system of an imagined cubic space, personalized for me. The light from my soul was in Heaven. And with that ray of light that made its way into my heart, my life started.”

The bump in my chest developed into a series of steps. For the light was disseminating throughout the course of my life and all around me. And as for those who were surrounding me, their behaviors changed as well. I was indifferent to my own confessions within my heart, and the shadows I cast were projected onto the people in my surroundings. For what was in me was the Truth of the Lord’s Spirit and the love of Christ. It felt like life. And the surrounding people were recruited into my love for Christ through this spiritual baptism of sorts.

The Holy Spirit was coursing through everything in that ripple of magnetism that exuded from my beating heart. The heart itself had learned of the three dimensions of space and time, how each of the axes had positive and negative polarity. And how the extreme positive end of each axis reached from the mind to the stomach, from the left to the right, and from outward to inward. These movements were centered in my heart, as it was a neutral location. However, since my moral

slumber was blocking the flow of spiritual truth from reaching my mind, the heart was then a negative source for the light of the Lord. And so it went that those positive extremes led to a negative center of my own universe, and this was the original coordinate system for my moral compass.

My father's spirit said, "Do nothing at this moment. And we will demonstrate how the good will overcome the evil in your lifetime. Through your own story of creation, at the formation of this moment from the spiritual light coordinate system, your understanding will be interwoven into the earth's magnetic patterns. The real-life system around you, what is real to your senses, will be forever shifted. This co-creation story, beginning with your spiritual baptism, will allow you to see through the lens of the Lord's Spirit within you. And outward, from the perspective of those in society and your surroundings, the co-creation story will have positions of reference for them to understand the story. Some can relate so much to the torments and anguish that it might feel like your understanding is based on their own confessions.

"Since you are in an argumentative state, the mind will reflect this psychological state in the mirrored universe you employ to understand the earth. And as you wait around to figure out what others think about you, as you try to understand whether they respond to you with prayers or curses, you will reflect into the heart while you are being tempted into the pit of torment in your belly. And the left side will swap with the right as you understand the heart, as you interweave the creative and logical sides in pursuit of the coordi-

nation of your talents, and as you exercise your free will and act in servitude to the Lord Christ's spirit.

"Now, the creation of these stories you write comes through the heart by the spiritual light offered by the heavens. And, as it has already oriented you in your life, your soul resides in the heavens and projects onto this map of life, and your position within the coordinate system will shift from positive to negative. The center of your heart, the origin point where the spiritual light is cast from the heavens, will remain negative. And the extremes, which are now negative, will remain negative."

My fiery father then said, "Within your projected life, you will fall, and that living system of your own creation, the spiritual narrative in the book of your life, will begin in real time. And the forces that you have yet to understand will confess their sins, creating karmic patterns in reflection in a mirrored way. That is, the negativity in the world will be associated with motherly love or pain. For it is your mother on the earth who will help bring about the birth of your spirituality. And the consequences that Eve experienced, the fall and birthing of generations from her womb, will be announced as a new order of life within your surroundings, for the creation story you live is one of self-idolization and self-devotion.

"However, as the poles begin to flip on and into the world around you, the heart will begin to shift ever toward positivity. The light that becomes amplified through demonic self-idolization or servitude of the dark lord within will be shared with the heavens by your thoughts and your words. Your thoughts and delusions plague the world, spreading a

plight of pride, envy, jealousy, and lust throughout your coordinated system. And the extremes of the axes that were positive will slowly balance out to the middle of the spectrum of colors between black and white.

“Then you will understand my stance by force, and the heavens above your crown will usher in new actionable steps. And the reaction of a slightly positive core to extreme positions of negativity will toss the mind into a storm of troubled waters. The light in the sky will be recognized, and the senses will come alive in spiritual rebirth, as far away or as close to the Lord as he judges. And the heavens will offer you a path to redemption. And the positivity of your belief in the words I speak to you will allow you to hear the announcement of the heavenly characters who will become known to you in your surroundings. For life is a tangled web of pathways leading from fears and chaos to the gates of Hell or Heaven.”

My fiery father then said, “I will take the help of the angelic friends I’ve made in this lifetime to clarify how genetic material can cause a pattern of revelations. And in that understanding of your creation story through the genetics of your mother and me, you will know what tactics are necessary for you to employ in any given game. The game of servitude comes from your mother in our family story. She had the positive role. Your partner in life was your brother, and his role was in the middle of that color spectrum, between black and white. He passed the available materials along from positivity to negativity. And I had the negative role in the logic of the household, conditioned to discipline you through fear and truth at the same time. Your story in this karmic storyline was interwoven with the stars. And

now it has been recorded in a book of prayer with the words of angels, other heavenly forces, and me.”

My father said, “Son, your job is not only to parse out the reflections of the world but to help others in life understand and strive for spiritual normalization. The color spectrum between negative and positive, where you positioned yourself, puts you into a role to understand these spiritual lessons about the rebirth of the world. You once readily accepted the sins in the world. But, for the sins that you engaged in and accepted in others, you will be absolved. The sinfulness will be purified through your mother, as she takes what is learned of spirituality and passes it on to the earth’s children.

“The cyclical nature of events in time is accepted as an angelic fount at rebirth in Christ’s perspective. And balance is restored in his ways, as time and space are positioned on this projected plane or gameboard. On this plane, as a trial of justice or morality, is a place where children will remember the roles of their fathers and mothers in Heaven and on Earth. And the scales of justice in the heart will be deployed for you and your partner to measure your actions in your roles, where temptation and redemption have occurred.”

My fiery father knew that it was a lot to understand at that moment. “The co-creation story starts with the right side. Below you, you will find your birthright. You will remain a new person through the left side, which carries your namesake. And above you will be your heavenly family, who will intervene through intuition in your heart, providing a spiritual narrative to help you learn.”

The Holy Spirit was then sent into my heart. And in the spiritual baptism and renewed co-creation story that I lived out in a mirrored world, the pages in my book of life began to move. One page flipped forward and backward in my story. That is, as I read and was read to by the people surrounding me, my emotions and thoughts fluctuated. And the Holy Spirit helped me to get reoriented and to understand where in the atlas of stories I was cycling through, where I was to learn about the Lord. In this way, the living Spirit of Christ was teaching me lessons within his storyline. And by helping me become aligned with the Christian narrative of life, part of the creation story was solved for the world. That is, my own fears of and anger toward the Lord, my own individualistic and secular ideas, which I had projected outward onto others, were brought into order. And I resolved to stand firmly within my moral compass, and share my knowledge as servitude. As the story unfolded before me, the pages continued to turn. And the ripples ran back and forth between the mind and the heart as each fought to be understood. I looked both to the relevant background literature to understand the heavenly knowledge, and to my own projection of my soul to understand its flaws.

My fiery father then said, "Magnetic pulses are shifting back and forth in your mind and heart. These 'pulses' move inward and outward through the life-giving spirit. At times, it is a small pulse coming from your projection of self. This self-projection is made of clay in the heavens, and a virtual character is projected into the universes. At other times, the pulses move outward and inward, at the direction of Christ's spirit. As you exhibit more of Christ's spirit in your identity,

that is, when you display and stand for the heavenly knowledge through your servitude of the Lord, you will understand how the moral anti-personalities shift around you in spirit. That said, as you grow in spiritual knowledge, the effect of that knowledge will ripple across the story of creation. Your awareness is constantly tested in life, as you project a self into the world of chaos, where many receive spiritual baptism through the rippling waves from the heavens. This storyline of God's son and, therefore, the Lord's testimony, will be felt across the world. And, given enough time to contemplate the knowledge between the extremities from left to right, above to below, and inward to outward, God will appear in life.

"The spiritual light matches all the light of the universes. The physical form of light, a photonic reaction, is of substantive consciousness. And the afterlife, the rippling anti-personalities cloaked in darkness, will be understood. For what is the self-projection of the individual into the troubled waters of consciousness, but a story of all time?

"The occurrence of everything is a book for humanity to understand. And from the wisdom of Jesus Christ's testimony in a sacred text, people will gain knowledge and introduce their interpretations into their lives. And through his Word, all things, holy and evil, and the broken characters of the world, will return from separation caused by the state, back into his storyline as well. And the church will be employed, the heavenly beings building each character a mansion in the heavens beyond the storylines of earthly temptations and trials. Gardens will be found, and the angelic narrative will be understood not only by you but by others, along with you.

“God wants His angelic beings in Heaven. But earthly forces tempt the kindred brothers and sisters in a new story of life, to which they succumb. They are manipulated with the promise that they will become an idol of history, immortal in legacy. These people, who are characters in this trial, will stand behind the earth’s polarizing viewpoints, and they will fall. And from the perspective of the Lord, the scales will reveal that you favored evil through temptation and idolizing wealth, power, and lust.

“However, by bringing the order of the Lord’s testimony to the world, you will restore justice, and the fallen angels on this scale will be outweighed by your righteous behavior. And the Lord will favor a culture of state, if it fosters unity in His love and encourages more people to decide on their own to follow this order of religion as church builders, as this will begin to tip the scales of the trial in your heart toward social justice. If you embody an identity of an angelic being, heavenly and noble, the people in your surroundings will take notice. For the world’s order will go from a state of chaos and confusion back to the garden from which Adam and Eve came.”

My fiery father spoke once more, but now it was in a low, hushed tone. It sounded like the tone of an angel who was slowly falling into the rippling universes. “Son, my appearance may change to accommodate your lessons. But know that we, as angels, walk past you all the time in the hearts of the wise. And the evil that fights us, trying to tempt us, will continue to be ignored by the Lord. But those who give in to temptation, they will be fought for. Through the stories you

share, your 'living' testimony of your experiences and behavior patterns, will be enough to please us.

"Your memories and life story will be assessed. The pulses move between Heaven and the world like they are on a timeline, but they move forward and backward. They breathe into the book of life, determining which chapter opens and closes in your body. And the others can be understood as characters unfolding on this timeline in the theater of life. This present moment then is merely illusory. The dream of reality of the world is created out of an interpretation arrived at through sensemaking in the organs of the body. But everything slows down as the chaos is vanquished through the heart and turned into an order of Christian storytelling."

My earthly father, who, in communicating with me, identified as an angelic being, then said, "I was tired of your nonsense in the past, in my trials when I was living in our house. And those moments, when my efforts to help you be better than me were being ignored by you, they turned into learning moments here in the heavens. For when you gave up on me, I indicated that you were no good, or at least not good enough to carry out my will, which I imposed on you. I wanted my legacy to be shared in the world. But you resisted and stopped my hope for power and promotion. However, as my life was concluded, I was reimagined and reinvented through honesty. For, in truth, I had lived for discipline in the world, and I wanted you to share my passion.

"But this story you tell is also mine, and your ancestors', the story passed on through our family lineage. And you will take on a fatherly position in this circle of life. The Christian

mission also shares cyclical timing in its storyline. However, your story will include the angelic teachings of morality that I bring to you as I see you needing them. You will be aware of me in your heart as I speak to you from the heavens, where I have stepped into that angelic fount at the feet of the Lord in his throne room, from which you fell. For in the universes, each who falls follows the lineage of Adam and Eve. And the souls of the earth, the footstool of the Lord, will begin to react as this chapter of the Lord's testimony unfolds."

The Holy Spirit then changed the orientation of my heart's pulses and the spiritual breath of my body, making them virtual within my universe. The people, birds, and beasts in the surroundings began to be incorporated into this storyline. The testimony of Jesus Christ, and the story of my temptations of resistance then started to unfold. And my father spoke to me from a holy place at the angelic fount of Jesus Christ. And from the place right in front of this angelic fount, was my fall into the universes. The story evolved into a real understanding of life through my projected spirit. And then that beginning, which was all positive and logical, turned into disorder. For I was told by my fiery father, who had lasted as long as he could in his lifetime, that our story, my family story, and the story of others in the universes, included Adam and Eve.

My fiery father, who has taken on an angelic identity, then acknowledged, "My son, in the living waters of the universes, the channel will be divided into the light of day and night. And you will understand why the Lord chose to start His testimony from the garden of paradise.

“In life, the people in your surroundings will eat of fruit from the heavenly garden or manna from Heaven. And in that garden, the tempter of the vipers, who control power in their own worldly order, will tempt the characters in the present to act. The further separation of the state or the universes from God will let the people fall further into ignorance of the story told. But the unification of state governance with the Lord’s love for humanity and support for their dignity in life will help the church members understand the garden better. However, the evolution of the story, from unity in God to a lasting bitterness toward the Lord after the initial disgrace, has revoked any privileges of entrance into the garden.”

My late father continued, “This creation story and the co-creation story then run simultaneously. In the death and rebirth in your present life, the themes of the creation story will play out cyclically. And as the storyline unfolds from your heartbeat, you will pass on the information you see, feel, taste, hear, and smell through intuition. Intuitive prayers of the heavens can reach those who are morally asleep through their dreams. But once the rebirth of the living Spirit of Christ is acknowledged, you will understand the fall from grace. The spiritual understanding of grace will then lead to compassion for those who are stuck in cycles of bleak moods and emotions. Pulses ride back and forth on the waves of time, agitated by each storyline of drama from the theater of life. To each person in that drama, this story of creation is an emotional universe. They call out to the Lord for advice. And they fear God’s anger, as He admonishes them, and they cannot conceal their nakedness or their lies.

“Humility, then, is needed. For God’s anger is due to the foolishness of Adam and Eve for losing the garden, as described in the story of Genesis. Let us consider that story now and employ the spirit of the Holy Ghost through the living universes, that the story may be understood by a resistant character. You see, my son, if you ignore yourself and you never identify with God, you will follow the evil one into chaos. And that chaotic universe will be turned around due to separation from faith. That devolution toward savagery in the materialistic world will cause a chaotic rhythm at first, and then the least will survive without interventions while playing the game of life.”

Chapter Five

The Heavenly Father, who speaks all eternity into existence, positioned the universe under the tunnel of the angelic fount. The head of this angelic fount appeared in the earliest days of the creation of Heaven. The angels speak truth from the heavenly realms where they live. Those rings in the heavens were created as spiritual arenas through which all angelic beings could be in oneness with the Father. God Almighty has the power to exhibit His anger and His pleasure, and all things under the angelic waters extol His revelations and His acts, including the bestowal of the gift of the begotten Son, Jesus Christ. The identity of Jesus in the human form was conveyed through the Word and the truth, which shone through the spiritual light in the garden of paradise. And in that light, through which the angelic fount found another realm of rings of truth, Adam was formed of clay.

My fiery father, who was in a spiritual heaven, announced how the light from the eternal and almighty Father in Heaven went from the throne of Jesus Christ in the Lord's spiritual home down into the garden. That light that found Adam was in his heart, placed there to allow him to understand where the heavens came from. The Heavenly Father spoke directly through the Holy Spirit into the Garden of Faith. And in that paradise of Adam and Eve was His collection of animals, including the birds and beasts.

My father, who has passed, then said, "Today is the day that all in the garden will undertake an examination of their faith. And in that eternal spiritual realm, where Adam un-

derstood his accomplishment in pleasing his Heavenly Father, he spoke back. This communication with the Heavenly Father then provided an opportunity for Adam and Eve. That was, to trust in truth. And His Word, which explained the love of the begotten Son, became part of the narrative of all humankind.

“The Word, which was a call to understand the love of the Father, who redeemed the world through His Son. It was also a call to action for a display of faith. This call failed where the Heavenly Father learned which love Adam chose first. Due to his pride in himself, Adam chose to follow the angelic being Lucifer, who is called Morning Star. The fall from the spiritual light of the Lord’s spirit in the garden was then a transition of faith into the ribs of Adam. But the Father offered Adam another chance to showcase his love and admiration for his creator.”

My father detailed how the Lord’s spirit was sent from the heavens and from eternity to show His love upon the intercession of Adam. “The Lord spoke to Eve, who had tempted Adam, and in that communication, the grace of love for humanity overcame the spiritual entity of the serpent. Therefore, the Morning Star, or Lucifer, found himself ousted by an intercession by man to the begotten Son, Jesus Christ. The Savior, the begotten Son of the almighty and Heavenly Father, then became one in temptation of the snake itself and its defeat. Jesus saw the departure of the serpent into the world and followed him there to nothingness. In that pit of zero accountability, the temptation of the serpent became his wisdom of this fall from grace.”

My father followed the stars in the universes like a path forged from the angelic fount, and there was a reprisal of spirit. "Here, the impressions of the Archangel Michael caused a spiritual awakening through which the beasts, birds, and human spirits became alive in the face of that deathly stare."

The following of the devil in his greed and lust for human conquering became a temptation for a legion of fallen angels. My father, who was supported in this conversation with me, was then called upon by the Spirit of the Lord to reclaim his position through the Son and welcome himself into the garden where Adam was tempted by Eve.

The heavenly and almighty Father then announced that the serpent had given his directions of greed, pride, and lust, through a deception where free will was discussed. The serpent declared his triumph of leadership in overcoming the Heavenly Father's advice. And, in ignorance, the Father's loving Word was betrayed as Eve tempted Adam into eating from the Tree of Knowledge.

My fiery father's testimony then began through my heart once more, awakening the Holy Spirit. "As angelic personalities gathered in the garden, we found that after the fall from grace of tempted beings, the souls who project into the universal space and time, they are then transfigured to darkness in the heavenly realms. But the angelic beings assist in conveying messages for the Son, Jesus, an eternal savior, who shines light in the heart as the sun in the garden of Paradise."

My fiery father, with truths to be told from before the angelic fount flowed, then explained how eternal truth is giv-

en as judgment from the Heavenly Father and of the spirit of the Holy Ghost.

My late father said, "We take this truth into the angelic fount by an effort to impart upon and impact the world's people in their projected selves. We do this by following the Spirit of the Lord and reflecting the truthful source of stars and constellations as they respond to the prayers in the hearts of many. The apex of love in these people, the characters who we follow into the universes, is a source of spiritual and physical light. That is, the begotten Son, who himself is love from the Heavenly Father, measures out judgment for those willing to accept the Father's words.

"All mankind follows this tradition of hearing, seeing, tasting, smelling, and feeling the Word of the Lord and Savior, as reflected in their identities, which mirror the physical light. And in a mirror of crooked understanding, the path of free will is tempted by the Morning Star, who fell from grace and tempted the sons and daughters that Adam and Eve bore, and who continues to tempt the links in their genealogy."

My fiery father then discussed the discipline it took to engage in the spiritual undertaking to allow this ring of truth to occur. "The eyes of the almighty Lord see all, in the spiritual sense of intuitive prayers. And the angels demonstrate their knowledge of the Heavenly Father's Word through their undertaking to help each person worthy of the judgment to see their provisions through intuitive communication."

My father, who has passed, continued, "The heart, beating judgment into breath, allows for the evolution of sepa-

ration into understanding and unity through the passage of time. From this heartbeat, in which the spiritual light of Jesus Christ passes through Adam and Eve's offspring, comes an angelic prayer calling for ignorance to be tested and love to shine in their living host, the Holy Ghost. These prayers are allowed to manifest physically in angelic identities, in a limited way. Treading the straight path of grace allows the angelic being to take physical form through conscious prayers that elevate knowledge into a spiritual understanding that descends from the heavens."

The fiery voice of my father continued, "We in Heaven follow these rings of prayerful truths and incorporate the images of dreams into memories. And knowing which patterns to choose from, the angels tempt and deceive, or they offer their support to and through the surrounding partners.

"Each person who is having a soulful awakening then chooses their fate for a trial of judgment. Each life is chosen by the Spirit of Christ, so they must then acknowledge that they have seen the begotten Son, Jesus Christ, in their lifetime. Through the judge, who loves all and everything good, and Jesus's message and living will – a testimony of the current paradise compared to the heavenly kingdom – will come a purpose.

"Adam, who was the first, born of clay into this universe, follows Satan and holds himself as tortured. And the mark of that beast offers nothing to redeem the devil or turn his talents for good. This mark of the devil, which sits below a crown, is, of course, on one who ignores the prayers of the begotten Son. And through their willful ignorance, the fol-

lowers will push for separation of the Word and the truth, and they will starve themselves of loving surroundings.

“Eve’s punishment of painful delivery of their children then became the burden of mothers of every generation, making them willing to help only those who accepted her in human form. They clothe their children and teach them how to behave in a fashion that breeds separation from Jesus Christ’s living testimony. It then takes a lifetime of passion to redeem the children to the living Spirit. But grace is shown through the heart, and it becomes the Lord’s presence in a house to reside in. In that mansion, which the angels created of spiritual light, they can be called to a communion with the heavenly Almighty Father.

“The Morning Star, a devil in the disguise of the defeat of itself, casts its light over the children of Adam and Eve.

“Experiencing the angelic urge to judge fairly and support the Christ is regarded as complying with the heavens as messenger and protector of the garden of paradise. Jesus Christ answered his calling to offer followers redemption for their sinfulness, which was bestowed on them by Adam’s fall, the betrayal for which everyone, including Eve, must suffer passion. Their passion, as they think first with the heart and next with the mind when in prayer, beckons the spiritual and fiery eyes of Jesus to the person on trial.

My fiery father continued, “The children of Adam and Eve, in a later generation, bore a son named Abraham. This son was the first in humankind who was living in their universe of earthly delights to be put through the trial of judgment. This story of Abraham will offer insight into how to communicate with the Lord’s spirit (+,+).

“And at this peak of knowledge of human ancestry, by tracing his family lineage, we will see that the Lord showed favor to the tribe of Judah by appointing David as king of His chosen people (+,-).

Then and there, my fiery father said, “The trial of Judah became one of flesh and bones as the Spirit of the Lord came to the earth. And through his leadership and his love for the Heavenly Father, he prepared for the fulfillment of all prophecies before him (-,-).

“And in the final position, at the right hand of the Father, is the bride of Jesus Christ, his church. The church is filled with members who identify themselves within the Lord’s spirit and choose to fight against enslavement of humankind and for a kingdom in the heavens and earthly realms (-,+).

Chapter Six

“The lineage from Abraham to the tribe of Judah, forged in his holiness, was a gift of the Spirit of Christ through which the Lord showed others how to live by responding passionately to the Holy Ghost and listening to the Word.”

The Holy Ghost then spoke in my heart, announcing that “the four chambers of the heart, each with masculine and feminine characteristics, shall be understood. For the chambers of the heart will foster communication with the beings and people in the surroundings, but your introduction will be made through sharing the knowledge gained from a storyline of walking in Christ’s spirit.

“The chambers of the heart represent your surroundings in your trial of life. And as you gain the wisdom of the new truths unfolding for you, you will attempt to undertake more disciplined behavior. Based on patterns from the storyline of Christ’s spirit, you will undertake the reconstruction of an available blueprint to build a family lineage connecting yourself to the line of Judah. This connection will then bring together a larger grouping of descendants in a royal unification of kingship and masculine energy. For in each chamber of the heart are patterns associated with the Christ’s spirit.”

The Holy Ghost said, “In the chambers, which are separate but connected, there are different aspects of knowledge, which you can identify as feminine, feminine-masculine, masculine, and masculine-feminine. This is due to the current of knowledge and the Holy Spirit. In the connection with Heaven is the Spirit, projecting into the universes. And

as such, that light from the Heavenly Father is cast down to the angelic hosts, into Jesus Christ's testimony, and given freely through his church. And in its accomplishment, the Holy Spirit will go clockwise, in effect, matching the magnetic pole of natural detail. Therefore, the magnetic pulse of the heart is one that connects with the Spirit of the Lord and carries his call out to others in the universes around you.

"Author, there is an element of magnetism embodied by the Holy Spirit. And in that magnetism is the wisdom of the Holy Spirit, which magnetizes the heartbeat that pulses into the world. And in each heartbeat then is the Lord's spirit, welcoming an atmosphere worthy of royal attention. Allow the heart's chambers to be a spiritual mansion for yourself, and in those chambers, your temptations will be controlled. Control is not achieved by wielding free will, through which one is tortured by the evil of the world; it is achieved by allowing knowledge to come to light from deep within the subconscious.

"Author," the Holy Spirit said, "following Christhood is a trial. And the knowledge of a magnetized spirit in your world is counter to that of a spiritual undertaking. So know that the Lord's wisdom will create a new path for you in your trial. And not all who follow Jesus will undertake such a trial. The completion of such tribulations is a game for you to play to understand the political order of power in your surroundings. The trial is for you to understand and speak aloud the Word of the Heavenly Father, which you learn through the Spirit of the Lord. You must also learn the Word of the messiah, Jesus Christ, who identifies in the four gospels which political order is to be enacted for the new genera-

tion of mankind. Through the adoption of Christ's Word by mankind, the church will expand in unification in our world under the protection of beings with angelic identities."

The Holy Spirit said, "The four chambers will announce the grace and mercy of the Heavenly Father, that the surrounding bodies and characters may witness His love. The sun that shines in the natural setting, through which masses of angels identify themselves on Earth, will protect the world's kingdoms. And each churchgoer will understand Jesus's glorious spiritual light as they use their own talents to identify which attitude they need to adopt to follow Christ's will and join in communion in his glory."

My fiery father then entered our conversation once more, exclaiming, "The heart's four chambers carry four labels – upper feminine, lower feminine, upper masculine, and lower masculine. I have offered to help you understand these through your senses as well as intuitively. Since you do not reflect upon the chambers of your heart as much as your mind, the people surrounding you in your co-creation story with the Christ will be evaluated. And those characters in his creation story who are children or who are like children, they shall be welcomed into his fold.

"The Father Almighty is the living Word, through which the love of Jesus is a testimony. And as we understand the need for Jesus Christ and we encounter him in the heart, each person will develop a social pursuit to become helpful toward establishing a heavenly kingdom.

My father said, "My son, we will discuss the ways in which you will be helpful. For we will be building in the second city of Jerusalem a new throne room. And in the angelic

fount before the throne is a tunnel to the hearts of all. Those 'rays' that connect each child's soul to the heavens, to Paradise, and to the universal filament are offered to allow those children to meet Jesus. And as they begin to realize their talents and their identities, as they become aware of the dynamics of angels versus demons, the people will protect the children from the plagues sent by the Heavenly Father.

"After you fell, son, you regained light and wisdom in your heart. And in your heart, you will understand Eve's presence first. The mother of all mankind is recognized in society still as having a lineage of holy descent. And that upper feminine chamber represents a societal order of cultivation and nurturing by planting seeds into nature.

My fiery father then said, "The character represented by the lower feminine chamber is a woman who was led to a different life by King David. Bathsheba was announced as wife for David as he sinned against the Lord, attacking her husband. And for this, the house of David was punished. But in time, David repented and was redeemed, and he and Bathsheba were blessed with their child, Solomon.

"The upper masculine chamber pumps the blood of the lineage of Judah from David through Solomon, and on to the next of kin through the generations. The virgin Mary, who the angels said would give birth to the messiah, Jesus, was therefore the purest person to carry forth the story of God the Father.

"The lower masculine chamber, the fourth chamber of the heart, reflects the women of God's chosen people. As all women followed the prevailing faith of each tribe, the strongest faith gained favor with God. And so, the lower

masculine chamber represents the correspondence of the bloodline to the thoughts and organs of the body, which carries God's messages to the earth."

My fiery father continued, "We in Heaven have offered the insight of your heart into the wisdom of the society. It is true that communities form when faith is offered a voice through the females of the people. Starting and ending in the circle of life, Eve, the mother of all, is a paradigm of fertility and youth. Thus, the bloodlines follow through the line of Judah's tribe to answer for Solomon, the son of David. The bloodline then flows to Mary, the mother of Jesus Christ, and the miraculous event of society ends with the Spirit of the Lord guiding a people under God, who continues to watch His children to ensure their safe entrance into His garden.

"The circle will be redeemed when the religions merge, and the mind and heart meet in this unification under which all people agree to follow His commandments. Then, the mind of each person shall be clear and without transgressions. Each woman is taught to caress the wounds of the man while banishing their pride, which was their original sin. Then the consciousness of all societies will consolidate into a new understanding of a coordinating system of living as a loving and unified planet that can speak together as a system of individual children."

The Holy Ghost spoke once more. "Author, today is the day that all men and women unite under a single faith. The stories of mankind will announce how each man and woman who has stood on the earth since the fall of Adam and Eve

will be redeemed for that transgression upon showing their own willingness.

“And for those who continue to delude themselves in sinful transgressions after the story is told, the example set by Satan will be followed. The people who follow his lead and behave according to their own plans and crooked paths will tire themselves into a moral sleep. And in that moral sleep, they will ask questions of their leaders, who will answer only in riddles.

“Satan, who once fell into the universe, will be understood once more, its whiteness and blackness, outside and within, represented by a dragon carrying all of the fallen people in its belly. And in that crowded belly of its own design, the thoughts of the people provide the dragon with strength to live out its ambitions of opposing God.

“Therefore, the minds and hearts of the religious must work together in a unified way, masculine in the thoughts of the mind, and feminine in the love of the heart. And any person who is not willing to be a servant of God will forget their own senses and be left blind to their own ignorance. And the men and women will fight with each other over who is promoting the name of Satan best. This primitive competition is a ritual born of temptation.

“Therefore, the path forward to understanding each position is to walk through the story of Jesus Christ. And that testimony of how the begotten child of God led a life perfected in wisdom and love carries forward his teachings. And in that life is a curse, which ends his physical existence. But the men and women will never fully understand how God fell in love with the Spirit of Jesus and offered His own

knowledge to secure His son a place in Heaven. All men and women, after they acknowledge the life of Jesus in this story, so profound, they become active participants in understanding their roles.

“Author,” said the Holy Ghost, “The light in Jesus Christ was so powerful that his glory led to his curse on the cross, where he died for our sins. He carried mankind’s sorrow from the earth into the hellfire to rescue them from evil. And in the same breath from which he lamented his fate to his Heavenly Father, he bemoaned being forsaken by Him. And his people, those of the new Christian identity, will recognize Satan as a force symbolic of all things unholy, only to later realize their shame and try to disguise themselves as they pursue his love.

“Author, you have been forgiven in the words of Jesus Christ. The church members will see that the ritual of helping individuals become angels requires the chosen disciples to lead together in a spirit of goodness in the heart. And this insight bridges you into the story and testimony of Jesus Christ’s lifetime, for he listened to and had the discipline to follow the good news of God’s faith in him. Through his many blessings, Jesus performed miracles and spat the devils out from the shadows of people’s bellies, hearts, and minds, together into his light.

“So it is that you create your own story, overlaying the positions of the mind, heart, and hellfire in the working order under Jesus Christ. This story follows your understanding of the metaphors of his body and blood, which you work to refine as you labor to make yourself presentable before the Heavenly Father. And through that understanding of the

meaning behind Jesus Christ's teachings, you will encounter God. Having been absolved of sin, and having acknowledged the Spirit in your own game, this trial will be your story.

"And in communion with the Spirit of Christ, as you examine the line from Adam through Judah's tribe, you will understand your own words and acts within the society and communities in your surroundings. For God is judging you in a trial of tribulations. How you listen and offer your love to others for their benefit will determine whether you conquer your fear and stop turning away from Him. Do not wish any harm on others, as that increases evil in yourself. And others will, without a doubt, be misperceived in their own worship of God, later in your death, as your testimony prevails in the world."

Chapter Seven

My fiery father continued to speak in our conversation, “God is good and just, and He has allowed you to interpret and convey my thoughts for yourself in a trial of morality. But the tribulations of a sad story will befall you, and you will understand the pain that you have inflicted on others, as you will feel that pain for yourself. That devil that you see in the universes, is actually your evil manifested, and that evil has inflicted torments on a large number of humans in the world, through a ripple effect. However, the waves of evil intent offer you a chance to be redeemed for inflicting such pain on those people.”

My father lifted my soul, offering it into the doors of the living universe. Both my own storybook and the holy records of my universal story were included, including every memory of redemption and sin. On the scales of justice were my soul and my heart, open and unadorned, stark naked without sin in front of the world. And the devil, who pushed much harder on the left side of the scale, was there in the form of a dragon.”

My fiery father said, “Since you were born, I offered you advice about your conscience. I waited and saw repeatedly that you offered an opposite and mirrorlike attraction to discuss your greatness. You distanced yourself from me and my words of wisdom and truth. Your brother was willing to improve his own life by watching you fail repeatedly. And often, you found curses against you in your moral slumber. And when you sought redemption for that, you said you accepted

your faults, but then you played innocent with a mirrorlike gaze into the world, as if everyone else was at fault.

“My son, you were the second born. However, my heavenly innocence allowed me the opportunity to learn how to help you in this trial. And from Heaven, I can, in spirit, ultimately guide you in how things are manifested for you now. I am not the judge. But the maker will offer His guidance on how to help you resolve the self-deception about your innocence. For when you begin to understand how the innocent truly live, you will know that you should be living within your heart.”

My fiery father continued, “As you approach an understanding of the savior, Jesus Christ, you will follow his lead and rejoice in his testimony. But in this moment, you are depraved and impure. The scales weigh against your unnatural constitution. And the natural occurrences of society play against your unrealistic notions. You feel like you are being pitted against an unfamiliar enemy that you wish were not there. And when your mirror of innocence is taken away, in your acceptance of that removal, your love for others will be weighed against your sinfulness. Therefore, your love and sin are measured by angels on the scales. And you will be reminded of the love you shared in life as you gain an understanding of how to live a life following Jesus.”

My fiery father said, “If only you had given your opinions a rest. If only you had promised to follow the Lord as a servant in honesty and truth. That would have been enough for me. In my trial in life, Satan was called to the stand, so I am wondering what will be in store for you in your trial. For sin has only one master, but Jesus met Satan, master of all evil

in the world, and drove him into the universes through his perfection of the love shared through the heavens and God. And through a pit of vipers, your praise for Jesus Christ will be examined.

“I ask you to follow his testimony to help improve society at large. With their wisdom feeding your soul, you will gain the attention of holy angels. And the trust they place in you will be brought to the attention of the devil. But soon your sinfulness will weigh less, as you carry a burden of the cross on the scale, along with your soul.

“There is a mirror-like feeling that Jesus Christ had toward his people. This mirror reflected their love, which prompted them to follow him to death, and it was placed close to his crucifixion on the cross. And when the sin of those around him impacted not only his ability to live life, but also to stand in solidarity with his Heavenly Father, he asked his father why he was forsaken. And in turning to the Father to question how love was found through his spirit in all people and animals on Earth, he asked for God to let him understand why the people were forsaking themselves to Hell.”

My late father said, “God, the Father in Heaven, will present Himself to you through equality of all living beings. This will help you understand how Satan fell from purgatory and the earthly paradise, into the pit where he examines the words and deeds of people across the world. Therefore, you will set the example of following Christ and ignoring the devil, and others will follow until the return of the king of kings is announced.”

My fiery father then said, “Each ritual that must come to pass is derived from a memory you hold of my scrutiny. Each moment of suffering that I watched in your lifetime was noted and paused for your reflection, through that self-made mirror-like introspection. And when you begin to find the light that is present way down deep in the soul, where equality meets damnation, you will understand that evil is defeated every time by the Father of all glory. My son, as you are a churchgoer, the Almighty Father will resurrect the church through you. And, as you help establish a new standard of living, you will meet the Christ in spirit and lead the way for him to share his loving thoughts in the world.

“The world will accept what they feel in their hearts. The sinful will understand their past mistakes and will be made unmistakably perfect through trials and tribulations. But the pain you will feel will have the intensity of what Jesus Christ felt on the cross. When you share our co-creation story for others to learn from you, the people in your surroundings will be resistant and accepting at the same time. And in that push-and-pull effect of the universes, Jesus will let you announce that his trial is over, and the new body of the universes will be granted and determined through conversations with your partner.

“Since my passing, your brother has been the king of this household. In the game of life, he watched your follies to learn about you, and in the trial of life, he was innocent and correct. Therefore, the waves of the voices of evil and suffering were not only assumed by me, but also by your brother, who wished you to know him better. Son, you were to love your God and neighbor as you would have God love

yourself. This reflective rule applies to everything holy in the world around you.

“This game, then, is of awareness. You will not follow what others say about you. The impulse to give in to peer pressure is a result of ignoring your brother. And in your indifference to innocence, you will be ignorant of your sinfulness. This will only allow your shadow devil to grow stronger. And in the pit of your stomach, you will sense that darkness. It may also be in the heart for some time as well. And control of the thoughts you manage will disappear. Therefore, your soul will be the only flame that the Holy Spirit can purify. The guidance of purification comes from your mother.

“As she witnessed our family fall, your mother’s love became her pain. She cared to keep us all involved and in line, growing as a family tree. But the roots were unexplored by us because she prayed so often for you, me, and your brother. However, only through your knowledge of Jesus Christ will she be able to take her rightful position in her heart, as she cannot organize and set up a game for all time on her own in her thoughts.

“But still, she sorts out the answers for you. She corrects your thinking. She praises Jesus for you. Yet your reliance on motherly love is a mask that perfectly covers your own sinfulness. The mask hides your shame. But she will reveal the shame of you and others the same for the reactions you ignore out of fear. You ignore my requests to show repentance. I ask you to listen to your conscience. You ignore your brother when he asks you to show that you care about others, as they just want to be viewed and treated thoughtfully. Your mother asks for your acknowledgment of her help

in serving the Lord through faith. And she asks you to carry that faith into the world, to build a life through relationships with family and friends.”

My fiery father then acknowledged the world as a cube, which my life was inside. A space of shadows which only I could understand for myself. To question this, even upon reflection, was not ideal. However, to ask forgiveness for offending my family would be the start to gaining an accurate perspective in a world otherwise full of lunacy.

The cube, or the box, was closed and locked. And within the box was a sphere. Both were within my soul. And the urge to understand my subconscious began to unravel all mysteries of humankind. Therefore, the earth was, in part, a game for me. I saw reflections of the truth through all the people, birds, and beasts. They followed my gaze and saw that my mind was accessible from my soul. And they attacked my weaknesses. And evil temptations came in waves. And the society turned against me.

This cube was, in actuality, a riddle. And solving it would help me understand the game set up for me by my fiery father. So, in figuring out the coordinate system, I began to learn how to interact with myself in the sphere of knowledge. The earth, in my universe, was a projection, captured in a space of frozen time. And the members of society shared my unique outlook and mirrored as a mindful entity, but control by the devil tore the societal fabric, as its members fell away from Christ's spirit.

For a church becomes aware of itself as Jesus's identity through the heart's awakening, and the sphere of knowledge in the heart becomes lighter. And through both the cube and

the sphere, my soul will follow the journey of Jesus's stories, as told throughout history.

My fiery father, who has passed, continued along, "All things in the story of Jesus Christ are adaptable in his body. And in the body and blood of the living Spirit, Christ's account or testimony of his Heavenly Father also bore many other religions. This pursuit by others of their co-creation stories in different religions mirrors the work carried forward through Christ's spirit as Lord of a message. And such faith is rewarded by the heavens for the people of Jewish faith, Muslim, Buddhist, Hindu, Sikh, and others alike. And the creation story will overwhelm all who dignify Jesus Christ's testimony as that of the universal begotten Son of God.

"Those who remain in opposition to this story will feel the living Spirit correct their error repeatedly. And in that mirrored view of damnation, the whole system will appear to be worthless."

My fiery father looked proud of me for the wisdom I conveyed in my co-creation story. He said, "I wish you the best in correcting me, and yourself, in your own head. The thoughts from beneath the crown of thorns you share are purified in the Holy Spirit through the church's sacraments. If you continue to struggle over these ideas, seek out the right partner, for she will understand your necessary corrections.

"In time, those who serve demonic forces will allow your grace and light to shine in them. And those who unify in the church will understand their own wisdom as they exalt your co-creation story as king-like in Jesus's name and lineage. Therefore, Christhood will be attained for members of

the church by walking with the Holy Ghost in preparation for Jesus's return to the world. And correction will be made of all religions, exercising their demons and sinfulness from temptation and allowing all knees to bend for Jesus's arrival."

Chapter Eight

All life is given freedom. But even where the devout practice their faith in a religious order, there can be anarchy unbecoming of Christhood, in which images of the beast of darkness emerge. For all those with wisdom will have love for the romantic stories and tales, but the Lord does not save all who have an earthly pursuit or passion. These individuals who follow the beast will fall into the pit created by Christ, but they will be given a chance for redemption.

The serpent, who was in the form of a dragon, and who shape-shifts between Satan and the Man of Time, was called to answer for its actions, disguising itself in God's light. The dragon appears in the darkness through the senses, and the illusion of personal freedom renders those who enter the darkness damned as the serpent's slaves. Such a political order uses angst to control minds, while those who claim to follow their own wisdom. For they push for separation between political order and church.

The serpent became a beast with a goat's body, hairy skin, and a snout. It had black wings, and it gnashed its teeth together in protest of being witnessed in its true form. It let out a roar, then it growled, "Author, why have you allowed me to be revealed? Through what order will you redeem all those who oppose the Lord's testimony on Earth? And how do you want me to admonish these people? For I will do as you ask to demystify the light of celestial orders in you."

The light became brighter, and the speed of Lucifer's heart increased, magnetizing the hearts of people from all religions throughout history.

The beast continued, "These poor individuals wage war within themselves, both condemning and defending their transgressions as they exalt and then curse the living Spirit of Jesus Christ. Yet, they will continue to compete with each other and destroy themselves as the world watches on in silent accusation. For their strength in numbers destroys the voice of the few. And in the face of overwhelming temptation, they will secure victory against their own religious convictions, as they are the loudest and proudest of the worldly damned, marching in ignorance across each nation.

"Author, secularism is a well-established aspect of the state in your world in the present. And through the testimony of the Spirit of the living Christ, you will understand why. His account is mighty and will enter into the storyline after the story of the Old Testament is explained.

"During his lifetime, your fiery father understood the Jewish faith alone. Yet other religions will continually learn from these stories. And the backdrop of all evil, up to the point when Jesus's life began and after it ended, can be thought of as the evil in the space between the heavenly realms and your currently projected life. Do you understand how, up to the point of Jesus's birth, people who had faith in a Heavenly Father were familiar with and expecting the Messiah? And the ignition of damnation between all things before the birth of the Son was sinful, because the lives of those before the begotten Son were defiled by ignorance of his purest understanding of living systems of humanity. His

love and passion brought the purification of spirit. Yet the evil, up to this point, was his evil to redeem. The Old Testament, therefore, shows how faith led to the begotten Son of the heavens coming down to halt their judgment.

“Author, there were other such religions before his birth. And during his life, Jesus recognized that there were other faiths as well. However, the stories that Jesus learned from were from the Jewish faith.

“When we discuss the evil up to the death and resurrection of Jesus, this refers to the religions that bore a resemblance to his creation story with the Father of all Creation. And the pursuit of this evil was to divert humanity away from the order of living on which the life and love of Jesus Christ was based.

“Author, you resemble your own fiery father who passed, and as you follow in his ways, you have dedicated yourself to rectifying these evils. And by the light that shone from the angelic realities of the spiritual world, I will surrender to those in the heavens who offer you advice. Until then, I will share my damnation and torment with you to help you understand the fear and pain that lies in your co-creation story. And yet, that pain that the world sees you suffer will be reconciled through a faith that will come only through your holy Christhood.

“The line of my story of evil intention will be redeemed, where all are welcomed by the Lord as their faith in him is revived. It is up to the Lord to allow me my time and place to go out into the world and then into the heavenly kingdom. However, your narration of a story of admonishment of evil warns of the damnation of those who will never rec-

ognize and follow the Lord. In the words of the Holy Ghost, we can only describe your game of storytelling as a new pursuit to understand the Messiah's return to adopt his creation story. Therefore, if you listen to the Holy Spirit, you will understand his message through yourself."

Lucifer then said, "In death's angelic form, I will undertake this storyline with you. In time, I will grant myself a heavenly decree to absolve my whole being of sinfulness. And on that scale with you, as you are angelic by divine decree, we will weigh on the judgment of the heavenly scale. And all temptations will become part of the storyline of humankind's overwhelming jealousy. But by His grace, God shows tolerance, which is felt in each person's heart, like the grace felt by Adam and Eve after their fall. And through the living Spirit of Christ, from Jesus's crucifixion and until and beyond the present, God will judge the devils.

"Jesus pulled the sin from people's souls in history. These miracles will inform people about my presence on Earth prior to my own admonishment. And in the living Spirit, the light of reason, he will redeem those who turn from my order of political upheaval as well. Therefore, the creation story for humanity throughout time includes every evil temptation since and including the fall."

The dragon then spoke for the first time in this conversation. It had been holding the beast that was Lucifer in its right hand. And in its left hand was all that was promised to it. This dragon that carried Lucifer was an embodiment of all evil yet to come in the world's present and future.

The dragon had a dark reddish hue, but its reflective, armor-like scales, which it wore as a skin, were very pale.

It spoke over the beast that was Lucifer. In a loud voice, it snarled, "Author, we are finally approaching the subject that I wished to discuss with you since you became aware of the conversation of good and evil. When you began to understand what was good for you and bad for others, and vice versa, you breathed life into me, bringing me into existence within yourself. You failed to conduct the current that was in everyday life, and the current therefore steered the direction of your lifetime. You were special to me, because of your sinfulness."

The dragon then looked to its own distant past. I knew this because, as it turned its head around to look behind it, my thoughts moved with it. And I felt my Lord watching over me, as his fiery eyes were still behind me in the background.

The dragon continued, "Author, I will say that you need to understand the principles of the Lord Christ's spirit to learn about how the game of life was played to perfection in Jesus's lifetime. His life was a magical and miraculous event, as he was the begotten Son of God. And in that season of grace that was granted to man through Mother Mary, He, your Heavenly Father Almighty, announced that the gifts for humanity were all offered as a grace, in spite of all the sin. Therefore, you ask to have the Lord Jesus Christ answer for your fall, your surrender to temptations, through his living Spirit's influence. This grace was then the answer that the devil or Satan needed to learn to gain an understanding of what he offered in his angels, both wicked and Heaven-sent.

"Author, the devils in the universes and the evil tempters in purgatory have turned back to try to understand how to

change and reconsider the fall of grace that occurred when they followed the serpent into the universes through the filament above the waters in the genesis of creation. The wicked then turned their backs on God as they followed the serpent when the filament split the spiritual light of the heavenly gates and the natural light of the Morning Star, who was otherwise known as Satan.

“Adam and Eve followed suit, trailing after the serpent. And so the wicked angels were in the universes first. Lucifer was the first to fall, and Azriel followed. They were each an incarnation of the serpent in the beginning, where death began.

“Humanity then grew from that cursed seed. The serpent tempted Eve, and Eve tempted Adam to eat of the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge. And the serpent then began to form its identity as a shape-shifter, at times becoming a dragon, and at others, the Man of Time. Do you see, Author, that evil appears in all forms of life? That the inner world of Lucifer was death? And that all the wicked angels, and all those who fall from the garden of paradise into the universe, come through this path of death? By taking this path, the serpent has little future before it.”

Then, the dragon looked at me sternly and said, “As for myself, I will soon devastate the world. I will be the only evil remaining in humanity. For the serpent and Man of Time are the present. And before those forms came the evil that Jesus saw in himself – the angels Lucifer and Azrael in the form of a beast with a snout and gnarled teeth, black wings, and the body of a goat. Together as one, all of these identities form the singular embodiment of the Morning Star.

“Jesus is putting Lucifer and Azrael on trial through you, to carry his spirit into the world. And as that political order becomes weak, the Lord and Messiah will return on his horse from the celestial heavens.

“Author,” said the dragon, “you were once a follower of mine, but by becoming a light scholar for Jesus Christ, you have done a wonderful thing. As you compose these stories, you gain understanding through spiritual and natural sense-making, and you then present your knowledge to the world. And as you follow that passion of light, love, and laughter, you will identify how it is that Lucifer and the wickedness of death may be forgiven. Then, we can examine all of humanity, and finally, myself, your dragon.

“This form of wickedness must come to understand its own guilt, just as the serpent who used the sacred fruit of the Tree of Knowledge against Jesus and the Heavenly Father in the garden of paradise. And as part of that storyline of wickedness to redemption, it is hoped that the Father will receive all wickedness in His holy grace, and we will all be welcomed into Heaven.

“Author, you will not decide any of this. You receive divine inspiration to write through our identities, as you are an absorptive being, willing to lay bare your sinfulness and explore the corrections you’ve received. Through which Jesus Christ will participate and grant total recognition of the reformation of sinfulness in your mindset, as the mind transfers sin to the heart and then into the pit of our collective stomachs, when we will awaken the evil ones, the ones cursed in purgatory.

“And as those in purgatory are enlightened, the stream of goodness that is the Word of the Lord will be sent through all people on Earth, masculine and feminine, for their correction. Then the evil of Hell found in the center of the universes will be offered back to the tunnel of forgiveness. The bridge back into the filament will be found as a door, not a mirror, for all things made of clay.

“And with every door that is opened, an eye is opened. So that the world’s cursed, these heavenly damned, will turn toward goodwill and follow that light from the pits of their stomachs into the earth’s core, out through the universal stratum, and up into the heavenly realm.

“Author, the heavens watch through the Lord’s eyes, which are set behind you. And there are more eyes in front of you now as well. They are the collection of spirits that watch the society. These terrestrial angels appear in the circles of truth found enshrining the Lord’s passion. The fiery rings of truth, which turn counter-clockwise in the people’s minds and naturally clockwise in their hearts, will manifest on the paths taken to become angels of this earth.”

Finally, the dragon told me, “You will understand my form as symbolic, as I will pursue the world’s damnation, embracing all who surrender to temptation. And you will understand that the angels, the wicked and the heavenly angels alike, will be on the earth to introduce the trial of judgment at the end of days.”

Section Two

**The Lord Christ within the Mind
and Heart (+,-)**

Chapter Nine

With the Lord in Mind (+,+)

My fiery father, who had lived in pursuit of a heavenly existence, shared insightful wisdom with me once more. In our conversation, he exclaimed that he had met Adam in the garden of Paradise. We will begin the story of Jesus Christ with the path taken by Adam from light to dark, because if we are to meet the savior of mankind, we must first find his roots in the world and the afterlife.

My fiery father continued, “In Abraham, the Lord was found. And Abraham, who fathered the most prominent religions in the world, came from the line of descent that included his father, Terah, and the patriarchal lineage of Nahor, Serug, Reu, Peleg, Eber, Shelah, Arpachshad, Shem, Noah, Lamech, Methuselah, Enoch, Jared, Mahalalel, Kenan, Enosh, Seth, and beginning with Adam. And so it was that Abraham was of the line through which Jesus became man, born of his mother, Mary. Therefore, as the Heavenly Father breathed the trial of Abraham into existence, the light that was the Word became his story, which laid the foundation for the future embodiment of Christ in the begotten Son.

“But evil was pervasive throughout Abraham’s life, tempting him to be sinful. His wife, Sarah, feared she would never have children, so she asked Abraham to lie with her slave, Hagar. Abraham did so, and Hagar bore the child, Ishmael, into the world. But the Lord did not punish Abraham

readily for this act. Instead, the love of the Lord was patient with their family. When the Lord informed Abraham that he and Sarah would be having children, though each of them was close to a century old, and that their lineage would include kings, Abraham asked the Lord to bestow this blessing upon Ishmael instead. But the Lord confirmed that His covenant would be with Abraham's son with Sarah, a child that would be named Isaac, and He said that Hagar's son with Abraham would be a leader of tribes that would multiply on the earth."

My fiery father then said, "And so, it became that the child Isaac was born to Abraham and his wife, Sarah. And, just as it was in the Lord's plan after the escape from Egypt to accept as a sacrifice every firstborn male, human or animal, and as Isaac was the firstborn child to Abraham and Sarah, Isaac was treated like a sacrificial lamb at an altar on a mount. But, as Abraham had shown his fear of the Lord, he was allowed to redeem his own son's life. And he sacrificed a ram that he found tangled in a thicket instead, thereby fulfilling the ancestral path toward Mary, mother of Jesus, in the future.

"The place where Abraham was about to sacrifice his son, Isaac, would later become known as Mount Moriah, located where the Temple of Jerusalem was later built, which is the holy center for Christianity. However, the Lord tested Abraham not only as a trial of one man's loyalty, or one religion's endurance, but also to ensure that the world's largest religions would find a way to evolve from the God of Abraham and all the other religions would evolve toward the same."

My fiery father continued, “The Old City of Jerusalem is a very important location for the Abrahamic religions, not in the least for being the home to Mount Moriah, which is now known as the Temple Mount. In the Jewish, Islamic, and Christian faiths alike, Abraham is revered as the father, most high, the ultimate patriarchal figure. And the evilness of temptation seeks to understand him as well. This understanding of his living testimony has been breathed into the clay from which were molded the religions that claim an Abrahamic descent.”

My father looked upon me, drawing from his mastery of knowledge, but also focusing deep into my background to gain help through the fiery eyes that radiated from the Lord, Christ. And he asked me to present a masterful reconceptualization of the story he was about to tell, through which it would be understood by all readers.

The Holy Ghost then spoke to me in my heart, in which I understood both my fiery father’s request and my own positioning in a trial of my life. “Author, you may find it difficult to conceptualize or even conceive of evil being within Jesus, the Lord and Savior, but, as the spiritual light of the heavens, he embodied the living voice of consciousness within the heart and mind of Abraham, and his position as the living Messiah for all humanity came only later. And in his pride, that weakness of character that leads all men to humiliate themselves before their Lord, Abraham put his own desire to have children ahead of the Lord’s intentions.

“In Abraham’s disappointment over not conceiving a child in his first eighty years of life, he did not show patience or trust in the Lord’s plan. Instead, he took Sarah’s sugges-

tion to bear a child with her slave, Hagar. But despite that," said the Holy Ghost through my own heart, "the Lord assured Abraham that he would father many tribes throughout mankind, and these would be through two lines, that of his firstborn son with Hagar and that of his son with Sarah.

"Author, this account is similar to that of Adam and Eve, in which God sensed Adam's disappointment and loneliness, and therefore, He created a wife for Adam. And when Eve gave in to the evil temptation of Satan, she gained control over her own life and fell with Adam into the universe, as they were cast out by God from Paradise. That fall of humanity to the serpent's deception became the first bit of clay that comprised the earthlings in their human form.

"And there in the belly of the beast, Adam was reborn in death. And Eve passed along the pain of childbirth to all women who would become mothers, which contradicted Satan's understanding of the order of death in life, and his pursuit of an infernal kingdom of darkness in the universe was then cemented.

"Thus, as all humanity came from the descendants and children born of Adam and Eve, so was Abraham the father of many tribes which were multiplied on the earth, and thus, much reverence is shown for the Temple of Jerusalem on Mount Moriah.

"Author, I gave you the account of Abraham and Eve in which they witnessed the wrath of God as He punished the people around them for their acts. Thus, the Lord offered His instructive prayers and interceded in Abraham's life, as when He offered the ram that was sacrificed instead of Abraham's son, Isaac. And Abraham's act inspired the Lord to in-

tercede in the lives of the people surrounding him, relenting on the punishment of those people.

“The Lord saw the deception of Abraham and Sarah, and He inflicted punishment on the communities Abraham went to in his lifetime. He punished those who attempted to break into the house where Lot, the nephew of Abraham, where Lot was housing two angels. The surrounding people were going to inflict brutality upon the angels. However, the Lord had given Abraham a warning before the occurrence. And in that warning, the Lord said to Abraham that He would destroy all of Sodom because the sins of the evil ones who resided there were so great that they lived in their own graves of sin.

“The Lord’s angels instructed Lot how the inhabitants of Lot’s house and his sons-in-law could escape from God’s wrath before He brought the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah with sulfur and fire from out of the heavens upon those cities. But the men who were to become Lot’s sons-in-law remained behind in the city, while God spared Lot and his daughters.

“Therefore,” said the Holy Ghost, “the Lord took possession of the voice in Abraham’s heart and mind once more, as he began to reintroduce himself through the child Issac. And so it was the Lord’s intent that Abraham had to learn that his own pride, for and through his children, became his tribulation and his trial. And in that trial of seeking his firstborn from Sarah, Abraham was given the chance to live out the covenant with his Heavenly Father, as the communication of the Lord and Heavenly Father would then be in his offspring and lineage through the Spirit for all ages. And repeatedly

thereafter, the Lord made good on this promise. This was until the Lord, through the Holy Spirit, begotten, not conceived, was created by the Heavenly Father from the Virgin Mary, who was a descendant of Isaac's line. And thus, from the tribe of Judah, Jesus came into this world as the savior of humanity."

My fiery father then spoke once more. And it was in my thoughts rather than in my heart that I heard his explanation of how the Lord's time is cyclical in the stories we live out. As descendants of the line of Judah, my father's request was that the Lord's story be deeply embedded in my subconscious, that I might bring it to the light of the natural world. For the spiritual and natural worlds work through His spirit, and therefore, they are in essence the gateway of the angelic fount.

My father said, "The storyline of Adam and Eve, including the fall, may illustrate this understanding, and the serpent who tricked and tempted Adam through Eve would be represented in a controversial manner, in which Adam would fall twice due to his own pride.

"However, it was Abraham who was tried for his pride in a cyclical storyline of Adam. And he produced two sons, Ishmael and Isaac. And before the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, Abraham repented; therefore, he was later put to trial to receive the covenant, which would eventually include the birth of Jesus Christ.

"Adam fell to pride when he was fooled into following Eve, and again when he tried to hide his sin from God in the fall away from Paradise. However, Abraham received redemption for his second fault and regained the trust of the

Lord, and therefore the Lord's angel removed Abraham's child, Isaac, from the altar and instead allowed him to kill a ram provided by God as a sacrifice. This ram then allowed Abraham to bring forth Judah's line in fulfilment of the Lord's future plans. And from that measure of cyclical history, we may understand a new revelation for a new trial, apart from the sacrifice of Jesus at Golgotha, or 'the place of the skull.'"

The fiery eyes of the Lord looked upon me from where they had remained within my background. There, they found my evil intentions, as a line of misgivings to be redeemed. And, through the Holy Ghost, the Lord's spirit said in my heart, "The ram is found in the storylines of the Lord and yourself. As someone who is exercising the demons that have been passed down through the familial line of Judah's tribe, you will understand yourself as a young lamb who has horns and the Holy Spirit. This means the young ram is older than a sheep's babe. And as the young ram, or the older lamb who is sprouting horns, your eyes will be an indication of the number of angels working and helping within your lifetime.

"The storyline of the house of Jacob continues in the present day. And this story, which is for Israel to understand as well as for the Lord to redeem the tribes by correcting their understanding of how and when the Messiah appears. For in the communities of the earth, a warning has been issued in the form of trumpets sounding in the hearts of mankind, and all who do not heed these angelic warnings will perish. However, in the hearts of those who listen, the servitude of the Lord will be found once more. And from the line of Judah, the kingdom of David is the line that will be followed

once more. For that is the truest kingdom, the one that will have the honor of announcing the return of the Messiah to the Earthly plane.”

The Lord’s fiery eyes still loomed there in the background, but I heard his voice as he whispered to my fiery father. His ancestry then became known to me; his roots of Jewish descent grew from that thriving family tree. My fiery father said, “It is through the sounding of trumpets that the Lord prophesies these accounts. Many will begin to hear the Word of the Lord once more. And the Davidic covenant will be renewed. The heartbeat will resonate and reverberate, from which all men will announce their intent to forgive the Lord’s wrath and punishment upon themselves, so they may hear His Word.”

Chapter Ten

With the Lord in Mind (+,-)

Jacob, from whom the house of Israel is built, was the child of Isaac. And Jacob fathered Judah, from whose tribe arose the kingdom of David. This is the lineage of fatherhood from Judah: Perez, Hezron, Ram, Aminadab, Nahshon, Salmon, Boaz, Obed, Jesse, and then King David. Thus, the Lord's covenant with David, a significant kingdom for humanity, is a significant storyline of the Old Testament. And the past, present, and future kingdoms of the earth then all live in a cyclical storyline in which the presence of God was, is, and always will be announced through this line of mankind.

My fiery father explained to me how the influence of the Egyptians and their interactions with the Israelites affected all of history, and gave rise to the people of Judah's tribe, specifically. He said, "During the time when Egypt ruled over the Israelites, the people of Israel were enslaved by the pharaoh. The pharaoh was chosen by lineage, but some of those who were forced into slavery would eventually engage in divine acts."

My fiery father's face showed distress as he looked into the future. He said, "The power dynamic shown through the pharaoh's presence in history, as a mythical king with godly powers, is repeated in historical cycles as a political orientation where orders are given to the slaves at the bottom by the slave owners in the middle, and power is consolidated at the top."

“Joseph was one of Jacob’s sons. When Joseph was sold by his brothers into slavery, he was taken into Egypt, where he was sold to Potiphar, an official of Pharaoh. After he interpreted Pharaoh’s dream, Joseph was given an Egyptian name, an Egyptian wife, and great administrative authority in the land of Egypt. And for seven years, Joseph oversaw the production of abundant crops and storage of surplus foods, which would feed people throughout Egypt, including the Israelites in this land, during the ensuing famine. It was during this time that Jacob, Joseph’s father, migrated to Egypt with his family. The Lord promised that the descendants of Jacob, who was also called Israel, would become a great nation there.

“But a new king rose to power in Egypt, one who was not familiar with Joseph or his talents. And as the new king felt threatened by the growing number and strength of the Israelites, the political oppression and severe mistreatment of the Israelite slaves became common. Yet their population continued to grow. Thus, the Pharaoh ordered the midwives in the land to kill all the male babies born to Hebrew mothers. But the midwives were afraid of their God’s wrath, so they let the babies live, and they lied to Pharaoh, saying that the Hebrew mothers gave birth to the sons before the midwives could attend.

“And so, Pharaoh ordered instead that every male born to a Hebrew mother be thrown into the Nile River. Soon, the edict affected the mother of Moses. After giving birth, she hid Moses for three months, then she put him in a basket among the reeds near the river’s edge. This was where Moses was found by the Pharaoh’s daughter, the princess of Egypt.”

My fiery father said, "Moses, a Jew from the tribe of Levi, thus grew up in Pharaoh's household, in the sphere of Pharaoh's court. And when he was a grown man, Moses attacked and killed an Egyptian who was beating another Hebrew. When Pharaoh learned of this, he wanted Moses dead. Therefore, Moses retreated to Midian, where he settled and started a family and became a shepherd.

"Eventually, God heard the cries of the Hebrew slaves, and in the form of a burning bush, He spoke to Moses. God guided Moses, telling him how to go about freeing the Israelites from Pharaoh's enslavement. The escape went as God had described, and the Red Sea opened to allow the Israelites safe passage out of Egypt, while Pharaoh was defeated and his army destroyed as they tried to cross the Red Sea.

"The tribe of Judah went among the other Israelites into the wilderness of Sinai. This is when God spoke to Moses and provided His ten commandments. Moses, a Levite, was thus given guidance to bring an order to the Jewish people through this divine set of laws to live by.

"David was the first king born of the line of Judah. He was preceded by eleven intervening generations after Abraham's son, Isaac. And so, he was included in the promise by the Lord that his tribe would create a dynasty and establish his kingdom. The Lord made a new covenant, in which He said that He would guide David's descendants as a father would, forever.

"Early in life, David confronted Goliath when the soldiers on the battlefield had been paralyzed with fear. He then led thousands of troops as he defended his people repeatedly and conquered neighboring empires. But it was only af-

ter God commanded him to return to Hebron that the men of Judah looked to him as king. David was chosen by God but anointed by the prophet Samuel to be king of Israel. As he was anointed, David allowed the Lord's spirit to flow through his heart to ensure that his decisions would be sound.

"King David brought power and glory to the people of Israel in fulfillment of the covenant of the Lord. But it was through his calling that he suffered pride and failure. And it was by the hand of a merciful God that he was provided a line that has reflected a deeper understanding of the Lord throughout the ages."

My late father then looked past me and saw the fiery, resolute eyes of the Lord, hovering behind me and watching over my life. And in a moment when the Lord was contemplating the spiritual gift of sight that was shared through the line of Judah, my father exclaimed, "Through miracles, the Lord guides his children away from harm. The escape of the Jewish population from Egypt was led by Moses, from the tribe of Levi; however, this helped to ensure the continuation of the dynasty of the tribe of Judah later on in Bethlehem, culminating with David, who established a lasting kingdom.

"The miracles of the Spirit of the Lord are both internalized through the mind and expressed in the heart and body. In fact, the Lord wishes us to realize that there was yet another covenant made with the Jewish people – the eventuality of the life that was to come in the physical body of the Messiah, Jesus Christ. This covenant with Jeremiah was that God would come back to the tribe of Judah, and to Israel as

a whole, and the purpose of the life of Christ would be fulfilled.”

My fiery father went on to explain how the politics of the Pharaoh and leaders of other religions or secular orders affected Israel, and the house of Judah in particular. “The political orders of the Orient adopted the views of the Egyptians, because they understood that the power that the Egyptian king, the pharaoh, wielded in leading a people was celestially affirmed. The Egyptian political order was comprised of small, independent states with their own laws and religions that merged into the larger units. Over time, the different regions merged into two political parts, and both Upper and Lower Egypt united under a king. Local leaders then supported the king through the chain of administration of the political order. This, over time, influenced the political organization of the Near East and secular empires such as Rome.”

My fiery father continued, “In this political order, the non-religious leaders could command power without answering to a calling higher than their office. And so, a system of organization was made entirely outside of the vision of the faithful. But from within the house of Judah came the promise of the Messiah who would offer guidance and redemption.

“And in that declaration of right and wrong, the law that Moses received, etched by the Lord into tablets of stone, became His covenant with the Jewish people and His guidance on how He should be worshipped by them. The order of God was then reflected within their obedience to the laws of Moses throughout their lives. And when David became

king, he led his people under the covenant of God, but he allowed his pride to cause his downfall and jeopardize the future of his lasting dynasty. However, David was a soldier who fought through the heart to build his empire as a house for his father, the Lord.”

My fiery father looked down and said, “The Lord has gifted his tribe a calling. And that is to turn within to listen and fight to organize a place for God in this world. Therefore, the political order created by the non-religious enslaves the subjects, who turn against themselves and become divided through the torture imposed in their attacks. Their memories of those who have disappeared in the throes of war and poverty remind the people on the earth of their downfall, and the rise of those in the administration of power. But in the surge of redemption, God will call again to the people of Judah and will send the Messiah back as promised, in the land of the current covenant.

“The prophecy of the Messiah was fulfilled by Jesus Christ as he walked on the earth in his lifetime over 2,000 years ago. And in that time of Christ, the covenant of the Messiah was made with all the earth. And yet, the temptation to adopt the Pharaoh’s views and follow non-religious political orders will bring about the wrath of God. For those who foster hatred and cruelty, not only through their actions, but also through the curses in their thoughts, will fail to understand this.

“God’s wrath will therefore be born out in the second coming of the Messiah. And that story will be replayed, in which the ram was slaughtered by Abraham, as this was when the covenant entered into the world. This cyclical sto-

ry, about the second coming of a horned lamb with greater eyes, will be known by all. And when the torment of following anything other than the Messiah comes onto the earthly plane, the understanding of this story will bring bloodshed for those who use the chains of power to enslave and kill the sons of Christianity.

“In the future, the danger of enslavement will be found in the power of structured systems, as these will do the thinking for the people. The population will be told to hate and kill their own sons and daughters as an edict of the political order that governs them. And as their hatred grows, the cries of the righteous people will be heard by the Messiah.”

My earthly father said, “In a disciplined approach, the Lord will challenge us in spirit to listen to our hearts and make decisions based on our acceptance of what he provides through intuition. And through our understanding of these works, we shall flip the political order on its head as we answer for ourselves in a trial from Jesus. Through him, the evil of all will be redeemed again. Jesus will not grant forgiveness blindly, as a sign of mercy and love, but thoughtfully, as light shining upon the greater consciousness of humanity. And those who ignore God and hide from him, through their own shadows of curses and cruelty, will go with the devil into the abyss of the universes.”

My father, who has passed from the living and now speaks from the afterlife with perspective gained with the help of the Lord's spirit, announced, “The dragon, who carries the evil created in sin, is actualized in the world through political order. However, it is too much power for a few people to wield, and those without fear of God refuse to

acknowledge their own sinfulness. Therefore, Pharaoh announced to Moses that he would rule over all, and he would prohibit any worship outside of his edicts through pressure and violence. Ultimately, Moses left the Egyptian court, and his resistance and leadership became a threat to the Pharaoh's position of power, and Pharaoh wished Moses dead.

"Pharaoh's authoritarian death grip on control and yearning to be worshiped as a king were then diametrically opposed to King David's politically oriented system, based on justice, equity, and the fear of God.

"King David followed the Lord's advice, provided as intuitive guidance, to rule fairly over the Israeli people and release control to God. And in that cyclical story of judgment and penance in Israel, King David, in his stubbornness, served as an example for others. Initially, he would discern the Lord's intentions, and he would then resolve conflicts or wars with other nations only if he felt spiritually inclined. But eventually, he disobeyed the Lord's commands, seeking personal gratification and a greater office before his people.

"The dragon is symbolic of evil, that which is outside the will of the Lord. And David, as the symbolic head of Israel, helped this evil grow. He built the Lord's dynasty by listening to the Lord, but he also weakened it by ignoring the Lord's word. And when sin came into the House of Judah, King David attempted to attack these weaknesses of character as the outside world watched.

"The pharaoh influenced the world's political structure. And in stealing away the world's treasures to secure its own immortality, the kingdom of David threw the Lord's

covenant with the king into question, striking fear and then hope into the heavens. For the angels came to oversee this justice and equity and bring inspiration to Israel. And in overcoming this attempted grab at the world's power and immortality, the tribe of Judah paved the way for Jesus to become the Messiah.

“In all the time of man's history, people have lived the cyclical stories told of the people of Israel. In these stories, the people wait to restructure their temples to welcome a savior. And in the present moments, they continue to battle their oppressors with limited success, as they move between sin and repentance. Ultimately, the Davidic covenant will continue to be upheld. It requires waiting and building on the success of a nation through an understanding of the spirit and the mind, and foreshadowing the heart of the Lord Christ.”

Chapter Eleven

With the Lord in Mind (-,-)

The Lord's eyes then opened in the background of my surroundings. In the spirit of the Holy Ghost, my heart opened up, and love flowed through the surrounding space, transforming my entire house and overwhelming me, as it was an enormous space to be filled with grace and mercy. This love, which heightened my awareness of my own sanctity, proved a purer form of a heavenly existence.

And the Holy Ghost said to me, "Author, do you now understand that the lineage of the House of Judah is aware of your understanding of Christ because the same has been shared through your spiritual family ancestry. And in your commitment to fairness for the story, and to accurately depict the line of the Lord Christ, you will acknowledge how he transformed from the spiritual light into the clay body that became the begotten Son, Jesus Christ.

"It is as if the seed of Judah, the roots through which all genetic material is transferred, was cleansed through the Holy Ghost and fashioned by the Heavenly Father to imbue Jesus with miraculous capabilities through his mother, Mary. For it was told to the virgin that she would bear a child before she had any familiarity with a man. And through that spark of creation, where the seed carried the history of all things that came before, from Adam in the Garden of Eden, and onward to Mary, the Father allowed His divinity to materialize in her womb as human flesh.

“The Lord Christ was sent from Heaven into the womb and born of the lineage that branched out to all of mankind. And through the genetic composition of his body, which shaped his understanding of forgiveness and established his passion for redeeming the sins of the world, time stopped replaying its cyclical storyline. And the angels wept when they learned that the Messiah, the great Savior, would walk the earth to enforce his decree of justice, love, and equity, which were revealed to the world through the spiritual lessons of his everlasting Word. For, as he came to the world in that manger in Bethlehem, the time then came for humanity to understand how one must answer for their sinfulness.

“Mary, the mother of Jesus, was informed in the night by the angel Gabriel that she would be carrying the Son of Heaven and all humanity. For God had found favor with Mary and would conceive in her His son, Jesus.”

In recognition of my intuitive wisdom, the eyes of the Lord, Jesus, came alive within my spiritual consciousness. And at this point, the Lord appeared not only to me, and around me in the house where I lived, but also throughout the world. I began to see Jesus welcoming others from different spiritual backgrounds and sharing in communion with them. For it was that the Lord Christ could do miracles. And in that communion, with the love of the Holy Spirit, he aligned my sight with his perspective.

In my intuitive heart, I heard the words the Lord spoke. He said to me, “Live with loving admiration for others. I am your God’s son, and my will is to redeem the sins of the world. If you curse others, you will feel your own attacks in time. And the cyclical nature of curses of sinfulness in his-

tory will decimate your heavenly abode. The resistance you exert and the discipline you exercise as you listen to and fear God will be overpowered by your curses. Let me explain, from my own experiences, how to live in the world.”

And Jesus, within the sphere of all light, crossed the bridge between us. And, stepping out on that arch, I entered with him into the garden. Through our communication, we met in the heavens, in the spiritual light of the Heavenly Father. And those eyes, through which he watched from behind a veil of darkness, were illuminated by the light of the heavens. His throne represented the unending power of his kingdom, as the angel Gabriel explained to Mary. Therefore, the love of the Holy Ghost helped Mary to overcome her hesitation to bear the Son of God.

So, the Lord Christ said to me, “From my throne in Heaven, I traversed that bridge from the everlasting world of my Father’s abode, and I entered into the world some 2,000 human years ago. And, to redeem the sins of my human father, and father’s father, and so on back to Adam, I chased and commanded devils in trials of tribulation, allowing the people to account for their sinfulness.”

The Lord Christ then acknowledged his purpose in offering his spirit in communion. “It is part of my plan to acknowledge the sinfulness of all men and women, and I will offer my redemption. And this redemption, which humanity gained through my forgiveness of their sins, was described in the legacy, story, and testimony of the Christ while I lived on this earth. And the communion of the body of Christ carried the living spirit, both physically and passed down as a

story through the history of mankind, that others may come to understand.

“This spiritual communion, shared in the breaking of bread and drinking of wine, is an acknowledgment of my living presence in the body of the followers of God in Heaven. The communion evidences a covenant of mine to all those who have heard the story of Jesus and anchor their identity in Christ.

“And, as it was the embodiment of the Christ’s spirit in which the Messiah was slain, that story stands as a testament to the resilience of a nation to overcome its own historical narrative of denial and embrace its identity in my body and blood. But the rest of the world followed the lead of Israel in how they interpreted the impact of my heavenly reign, as Christ’s spirit and the Lord. Therefore, the killing of the Lord, the Prince of Peace, was ignored in the world’s cyclical storyline, and the cyclical patterns of the covenants that were made by God, the Heavenly Father, continued. However, although the counterclockwise patterns that brought everything back to Adam were ignored before, the story of Jesus’s life as the Christ, and the redeemer of nations, began to move the patterns clockwise.

“The covenant of Jesus as the redeemer of all from sin, in which he will cleanse the soul of all who accept the spirit of the Lord within themselves, will open up future opportunities to be guided into new talents issued by the Lord. For his identity as the living Christ serves all of mankind. And the talents required to engage in the communion of spirit are gained through baptism in the fountain before his throne in his heavenly temple.

“Within the legacy of each house is a Christian spirit of ancestry, which leads the heavens to battle Satan in the world. And the Spirit of the Lord, he who gave his testimony in the world and was slain, continues to bolster these households in the present moment. Therefore, the future where cycles are overcome is one where talents are derived from a history of Christian ancestry, and the world that continues to relive a cyclical history is a world without faith.

“However, the Lord endures as a living spirit. And those who can identify with the Spirit of Christ in life, and offer penance when they fail, will walk with the Lord Jesus Christ as they build the church. For this kingdom of Heaven on Earth is his covenant. And for many, it is near.

“The presence of the Lord Jesus Christ is a bridge into the garden of Paradise. And the tree that sits in the middle of the garden is that of wisdom. It holds the knowledge of good and evil, as Satan’s spirit has described. The fall of Adam and Eve was due to pride, and it led to immense loneliness. And it is toward that loneliness that the angels fly from the fountain at the footstool of the throne of Christ, to greet each soul that arrives in Paradise from the universes and help them adapt.

“Jesus once lived and walked the earth, and the story of his life is still lived out today by those who destroyed him. Yet he offers his mercy for those who repent. But those who harmed him will accept his body and blood and ignore his wishes. They will either ignore his wants in their hearts because it would require them to sacrifice more than they are willing, or they will ignore that there was ever any wrongdoing on their part, since they do not fear the Lord as God’s be-

gotten Son. And as the heavens intercede in the lives of many on the earth, those people who ignore the will of Jesus Christ will become weakened. But their punishment will be great, for in their storylines, they only answer to themselves.

“Meanwhile, the sinfulness will grow in the devil’s right hand, and Azrael, the angel of death who fell with Lucifer, will be strengthened. And Satan, a beast who plots against the Holy Son, will begin to overwhelm the oppressed in pursuit of his own wishes. And the cure to the war, starvation, illnesses, and other plagues of the beast will be for people in communities, churches, temples, and mosques to rise up and lower their tolerance of evil. For the pursuits of these men and women are just and holy.

“One can live in communion with Christ’s spirit by living pursuant to the testimony of Jesus of Nazareth, as he lived in the world. His spirit came and lived as the Messiah, who came from the heavenly throne. And in this life, which was of Godly descent, through which all paradise was alive in his spirit, he became man. Through his baptism by John, he was recognized as the Messiah. And, with all of his spiritual blessings, and all of the talents he received as a human, he performed miracles.”

The Spirit of the Lord Christ then announced to me, “The instructions of the Lord Jesus were spelled out in his testimony in life. For he said to live in God’s wealth of knowledge, which the living spirit of Jesus provided through his Word. He lived his life as an example of how to love, and he died to redeem humanity from sin.

“However, God the Father in Heaven wants to acknowledge the establishment of an additional covenant made

through the house of Judah. The Messiah will bring redemption for the sins of mankind once more. And the Messiah will come again, returning to his life on Earth to bring about the spiritual existence which God has intended for the world's inhabitants. The beasts, birds, and people of the world who are reconciled to God will acknowledge their purification of the fall from Paradise, and they will be allowed to enter the Kingdom of Heaven."

The Heavenly Father, God Almighty, then spoke into my heart, mind, and the atmosphere that surrounded me. "Author, when you truly understand that the present moment is irrelevant, you will come to understand why there is a need for judgment. And in that judgment, when it is your appointed hour, you will come to see, feel, smell, taste, and hear the thoughts and feelings that have echoed through you in opposition to your own, like a mirror, reflecting the times you have fought yourself and others.

"Jesus was aware of these oppositional forces, but he did not see, feel, hear, taste, or smell them to the degree you did because your ways were erroneous. And your error of pride, which led you to your fall, was foretold by the faults of all in your family history, as pride preceded the downfall of those in your lineage, repeatedly. That is to say, my covenant with your family, which has existed since Adam, is carried and repeated in memories, both in physical material and spiritual essence. Therefore, that covenant, the same covenant that was made through Jesus Christ's living spirit, is the promise of Jesus's loving embrace for all those throughout history who accept him as the Savior.

“Author, during my son's life, he revealed his prophetic vision of Heaven on Earth. And in his judgment, and his work toward the redemption of Adam and his line for his fall from grace, you will find your place alongside him. If your judgment is too burdensome, then your sins that have not been absolved may overwhelm your line after you leave, because they are carried both in genetics and stories added to lineage, both physically and spiritually on Earth.

“This hereditary pattern is quite similar to that which was born from the slaying of my only begotten son in Golgotha. Under this curse, he turned to me and asked why he had been forsaken. And when he gave up his ghost to me, returning as king of the heavens once more, the earth did shake. And the curse touched everyone involved in the slaying of my Son, as then, they had to experience their own sinfulness and ask for redemption through him.

“His church was later founded by his friend, Peter the apostle. And throughout the ages, it was his message, not heavenly acceptance alone, that would be a compass that guides the morality of humanity and points toward that heavenly bridge where people will meet Jesus in spirit.

“So, you see that your understanding of time, whether the direction is counterclockwise or clockwise, will determine which side of the covenant you would understand. And understanding both directions equally would mean that the apex of a trial is a fitting moment for you to receive judgment or to learn the purpose of your lifetime.”

The Heavenly Father continued through the spirit of the Lord Christ, “Author, there is no way to relive what Jesus went through in his lifetime. But he influences the world

still, bestowing the prophetic wisdom of his spirit upon his devoted followers. Their passion as they await the return of Jesus to fulfill the promise of the kingdom of Heaven on Earth is good and wholesome. And judgment will be rendered for the sinfulness involved in the politics of the world at the apex of his trial of humanity for their materialistic and evil ways.”

Chapter Twelve

With the Lord in Mind (-,+)

The Holy Ghost then came into my heart and brought the living Word of Jesus, shining a light through which Heaven radiated. That spiritual light, which is constant and never dulls, is the source of our imagination and creative spirit, and it is amplified by our reason. And the reasoning we use to form our logical conclusions is grounded in our passion and love for the almighty Heavenly Father, based upon which we administer judgment for our fellow men and women.

“Therefore, the living spirit of light that shines into the world through the hearts, minds, and living surroundings of men and women forms a bridge, but that bridge is limited by the filters through which each person is judged themselves. And if they reflect on that judgment, and they accept the living spirit of the Holy Ghost, they will have greater morality. So much so that the Lord Christ will rely on their behaviors and words as an exemplification of obedience.

“To be an exemplary Christian, then, is to follow that conscious voice in the heart, and therefore the mind, throughout life, despite the expectations and illusions of the sinful world on Earth. The dark times, which the Lord invited into his own body while he prepared us for and carried us through his death, were and are to be relived. Those who remain steadfast in history would ignore the curses from Jesus’ lifetime, which still remain in the story we Christians live out today. And as long as the spiritual light shines within

even one Christian believer on Earth, the story of redemption and receiving Christhood will still be lived out among humanity.

“The spiritual light is a counterbalance to the evil of Satan. And throughout the history of mankind, there has been, and there continues to be, an abundance of sinfulness that is accepted, primarily greed and lust. These temptations are the two horns of the dragon.”

The fiery eyes of the Lord, who had watched over me in my experiences and knew my spiritual background, spoke in my heart once more. He made himself known, greeting me where I was and acknowledging my writing. And in that moment, a sense of peace swept over me, and the atmosphere changed, bringing a scent of roses and a feeling of pure love.

He said, “Satan easily wins over the wicked, as he tempts those who are materialistic and gluttonous. And as he devours those who curse humanity, you can begin the conversation of conversion from sinner to angelic with those who might embrace my love. In this way, I will fulfill the covenant of becoming savior and messiah once more.

“You are not alone in your lives on Earth. Humanity is not doomed to repeat the mistakes of the fallen few angels in this world. Those who fall will not be restored into the heavens quickly. It takes time to purify sinfulness from the soul. Therefore, those who were angelic but have fallen as wicked beings will still be received in time, after a period of purification. But the devil, Lucifer, and the angel of death, Azrael, will be freed from interference. That said, the devil and death will be captured, and they will be offered new life, only when the evil is ready to wage war through mankind.

“Through this prophecy and my covenant, you will understand how death is defeated and the sinful redeemed throughout the entirety of the human race. For soon, the time of illumination will come, when the consciousness of men and women will be ready and open to acceptance, and the judgment will be introduced. The trial of humanity will slowly begin, as each person found through heavenly and angelic wisdom sounds the trumpets to voice the warning.

“And the spirits of those who experience physical death during this period of illumination will continue to be harvested by the Spirit of Christ and reaped when their divinity is encountered in the garden. Therefore, those who live and wait in the garden will multiply in number, as spiritual interventions continue to increase.

“The people who follow Christ will look upon the world and see temptation and evil through a different lens – one which makes it difficult to accept that humanity was cursed from the beginning by the betrayal at the Tree of Knowledge in the garden. But that was not the only tree with roots that grew into the universes. Other trees, including the Tree of Life, still grow among all who are faithful.

“I will discuss the redemption of those who reach their spiritual apex when they meet me in the garden. For I am the Lord who was embodied as the Christian Messiah, and my story shall unfold for humanity. And in my harvest, reaping what fruit is available and taking it to the heavens as I sort those who remain in ignorance of their own wrongdoing, even in death, I will gift myself to the men and women of the world once more.

“Your words praising the living Spirit, and the warnings that all that is spiritual and heavenly will become reality, these words are the truth. The books written by living people on this earth, with the guidance of their guardian angels, will be delivered into the hands of the Father Almighty. Despite the best intentions and intercessions from the angels, He will accept the book of sinfulness in His left hand. And He will close that book at the end of the purification period. The book of the damned is one that only the devil will accept, as part of the covenant of Jesus Christ. The return of Christ would then fulfill the prophecy and his promise to redeem all of the sinners of the world.”

The Heavenly Father then announced into my heart through the Holy Ghost, “Author, when the devil sacrificed his place in Heaven, he determined his own punishment. And in that punishment, where all things cloaked in shadows and torment are reexamined, the beast will admonish itself, first within the belly and then the heart. The mind of the serpent called Morning Star might then begin to be known. Its lunacy and darkness will dissipate as the light reaches conscious minds throughout the universes.”

And my Heavenly Father explained that Jesus would bring all of humanity together in the garden of Paradise, but the ambition of Satan would bring them damnation and subjugation to the Morning Star. He said that the universes will collapse into the heavens once more, but that the universe of the devils in the shadows will remain with the Morning Star, as its narrative will remain separate in history, never to be repeated again, and in nothingness, it will be destroyed.

And the holy Father looked at me and said, “All will look favorably on the line of Judah, your house in the heavens. By this arrangement of people through history, by your ancestry, you will step foot in both the garden in Paradise and the house in Heaven. For in both places, there will be new stories to tell.

“Author, in oneness, you will live as part of the family tree in the garden, with its limbs growing strong under the power of the living will of the Lord. And all of the relationships that you helped foster throughout your line of ancestry will grow stronger in that oneness, and you will recognize how different and similar you are to others within your house – that being the tribe of Judah.

“From your place in the heavens, you will continue to devise a story in alignment with my plans of co-creation. From his throne room, Jesus will announce that there will be a new covenant. And to you, the covenant will be revealed. And, at the point where all things that were meet all things that ever shall be, all the beings who live or have ever lived will hear of the power and glory of Jesus in Heaven.

“Author, this covenant, which shall be eternal and everlasting, is one facet of my plans of creation. And, to implement my order of rule, supreme judgment for all will begin in the garden. And in that judgment, Jesus’s mercy shall offer forgiveness once more, just as when he was revealed in the past as the Savior who came to Earth to protect his children of the church.

“This supreme act of redemption in the garden of those people who have repented will allow them to live happily once more with their families, as they will begin to find their

identity in my presence. And a glorious day will occur, when the wicked will be led to salvation by my only son's testimony, and they will lose all sense of history – though not their memory – and they will lose their materialistic desires.

“My son, Jesus, will have returned to the world to oversee the end of the creation story of the fall of Adam and Eve, bringing about the beginning of a new standard of life again. And under the new covenant, foretold by Revelation and effectuated by the house of Judah, the sacrifice of each person in the garden will be recognized and cherished. And they will celebrate that day of repentance, for the souls living in Christ's love will see his living Spirit revived.

“In Christhood, all in the garden will see how Christ suffered through them. And in that solemn act of penance in the garden, those people will adopt an attitude of servitude unheard of in people throughout the world.

“Those angels who are wicked and fallen will bend the knee, bowing to their new master in Heaven, Christ the Lord. The spiritual light in the garden will become so intense that all will be bright enough to carry the body of the heavens back from his hands into his heart.

“So, in the garden will be the souls who were not lost to the temptation of the Morning Star, those who were originally saved by the Messiah. And as he returns to their consciousness through their hearts, he will bestow grace and mercy upon all who continue to live for his love. However, in the garden, their spirits will communicate with him in a new way. They will find justice in his decree. And their reward for accepting and acknowledging his love in sincerity will be a new way to love completely through Christ's spiritual heart.

“The spiritual bridge that extends from humanity back to the heavens allows for the bones to be brought into the heavens, and the physical bodies that were once fragile and slow become strongholds of spirituality.”

The Heavenly Father said to me sternly, “Author, when the trumpets sound in your heart, you will understand that the angels are warning you. And that sound will resonate, carrying the warning through yourself and out into the surroundings. You will carry that tune in your soul as you examine your heart, and you will recognize my voice speaking through Jesus as I bring you pure and everlasting peace of mind. And when all is balanced, when you find your peace in me, through the love of Jesus, your spiritual mansion will be ready and waiting for you.

“The line of Judah will weave itself back into an order that reflects not only its combative side, fighting on my behalf through struggles and trials, but its peaceful side as well, fostering all relationships for the living Christian spirit. This apostolic passion, which demonstrates my justice through your tribe, is channeled into the garden, and all the groves of plants and flowers therefore remain outside my heavenly city. And the house of Jesus, which is in the city, will keep his throne, where the fountain provides a connection between all the universes and his good and righteous angels.

“Those in the house of Judah will remain in that city, and you will visit the gardens to aid Jesus whenever there is deviation from my will. And to maintain justice, you will help those who fail to remember my son’s sacrifice as the primary example of love and suffering for me, his Heavenly Father. And so that people never open portals within them-

selves and fall away from godliness, you will protect those who are tempted as they begin their second trial of justice in the garden.

“And the cherubs and seraphim in the garden, those who wield swords ablaze with fire, will touch the people who torment themselves in anticipation of their own fall. And through the love of my son, you will send me information on how you understand their actions. For you will become one of the winged divine beings in the garden, wielding such a sword upon the back of a horse, and then you will begin the conquest of sin through the love of Christ. And as long as their love endures, these sinful souls, ever closer to me through their self-inflicted pain and acceptance of my mercy, will be reaped back to Jesus’s heart.

“Author, now that you understand how Adam and Eve were saved from the serpent known as the Morning Star, I will tell you how Jesus will continue suffering the hellish torment dealt by Lucifer and Azrael. My son will speak out to all in the heavens to warn them against listening to the fallen angels. And in the garden, where all things have been purified, they will remain muzzled until they are set free.”

The Heavenly Father looked into the future, gazing at the light that will eventually come to be seen by us slow-thinking humans. “For which all things will be at peace, I will say that the light will be supreme. In the garden, the Morning Star will be offered redemption. The curses of all things that were in my garden will be announced. And all things, people, beasts, and birds under the sun will be forgiven or forgotten.

“The holy city will be brought forth from within their souls. And Lucifer and Azrael, twin stars fallen as one body, the universal body and spiritual heart, can be destroyed through their ignorance. Either they will accept this light and listen to and obey me, or their ignorance will be expanded to the point where all darkness will be destroyed in one fell swoop of a sword that cuts through the light, lopping off its connectedness to me and the heavens. That expansion of ignorance will be the final torment and blow to their existence.

“So Jesus, who in life cast out the sins of men and women by acknowledging me in the light in their souls, will reexamine how the devils are cast out through miracles of faith and through your own testimony. The points of testimony of your life will begin sooner than you realize. And soon, you will recognize how to bring the devils out by offering your own sacrifice of body and mind to those with weaknesses of character that can be strengthened through my guidance in your heart.

“As you write this story, angels have followed you from the throne of Jesus into your surroundings. If you are wise, in your story, you will belong as closely in Christian fellowship as possible.

“And so, the covenants have been shared by the Spirit of the Lord Christ. And the bodies of the past, present, and future in which those orders of my justice are grounded will come from darkness into light in the world.”

Chapter Thirteen

Goodness within the Community Heart's Upper Feminine Chamber

The Spirit of the Lord Christ then announced to me, “The fall of Eve lives on in society, as the consequences live on in the world. And the truth about what actually occurs through her children will be determined, case-by-case, in the trials of humanity.

“Inside every person, through the memory emblazoned in the linkage carried through our genetic materials, comes the archaic virtue which Eve sacrificed to taste the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge. And with each seed that sparks the creation of new life, that fertilized egg is granted a soul and determined by the heavens to be a living being.”

Then, the Lord said, “The memory carried through family lineage is then sorted into the body of every living person born of the womb. And with their agency and awareness in the hands of a heavenly spirit, they are wrenched and pulled between their heart, Eve, and the Heavenly Father.

“And, as the Heavenly Father has full knowledge of the fall of humanity through Eve, He captures this account in a living storyline, written as a heavenly account. And in the story of the universes, in which the serpent continues to tempt and introduce evil to the human race, the Father will offer redemption at the end of each trial. All things that have occurred and ever will occur over the course of time, and the universal records of the human race, are and will be inter-

preted through the lens of the fall of Eve, the submission to Satan's temptation in the garden of Paradise.

"The storyline of Eve depicts where people live, given their compromised state of redemption due to Satan, and given each individual's personal state of grace with the Heavenly Father. Let me explain.

"This explanation of the storyline of Eve is rather simplistic. However, her emotions and state of grace are only comparable to one individual in the story of the Son of God – that of Mary, who bore the Messiah into the universe through the Holy Ghost.

"In the storyline of Eve, which most people have heard, the serpent told Eve that one who ate the forbidden fruit of the Tree of Knowledge would understand good and evil, and in that way, become like God. Eve was intimidated and fooled, but she believed what the serpent said was true. And she offered the fruit to her husband, Adam, tempting him to eat as well.

"The light that holds my spirit was in the seed that sparked creation. You see, the spiritual and natural light comprise the filament of the heavens. And through a tunnel of light, love, and laughter, the result from the Christ's throne was cast. It then became encapsulated by the seed of creation in the vessel of life that was thrown from clay.

"So, the spiritual light of all things heavenly came from my throne and through my Word, the Word of Jesus Christ, and through the Word of the Father, spoken to Adam and Eve and their lineage. When they ate the forbidden fruit, their spiritual bodies fell into the serpent's abode and deep into the dark nothingness of its belly. And as their senses

have reawakened, the natural light has become dominant in the physical reality of their universes.

“But as for you, your will and your agency will be absorbed in the belly of that beast. You will therefore follow the command of Mother Mary in the heavens; you will accept the darkness of the serpent’s belly being absorbed into your mind, and you will accept the torment of your soul by absorbing the darkness that is within Eve’s heart. This is what happened to the mind and heart of the offspring, including the first son born, Cain.

“You see, all things move toward balance once again in nature and nurture. Cain understood the world, from physical materialism to spirituality. And although he was a resourceful farmer, keen in mind, he ignored his own wisdom to follow the spiritual path of the heart. And in ignorance of the Heavenly Father’s love, he slew his brother, Abel.

“There was then a silence in the fields in which Abel had kept his sheep. And Cain forgave himself, justifying the murder of his brother in his own mind and ignoring his own jealousy and pride. This account led to a sinister outcome, giving rise to sinful behavior for generations.

“The mind conquered the heart that day in the field. And the move toward balance between the darkness and the light – closing the vast distance between purer darkness and purer light – resulted in a collapsing storyline, where God was angered.”

The Spirit of Christ then wept to the Heavenly Father. Through tears, Jesus said to Him, “Despite our loss and suffering, you blessed Eve and Adam with another son to continue the seed for righteousness on the earth. As it was, Cain

left for the land of Nod, as he refused to acknowledge any spiritual light while fleeing with his wife and starting his family.

“Seth, who was the third child born to Adam and Eve, grew, and his line thrived, giving multiple grandchildren to Eve and Adam. One of these was Enosh, and after successive generations of this line, came Noah.

“So it was, from the beginning, that Adam was the father, Cain the first-born son, Eve the mother, and Abel and Seth the second- and third-born sons. And in that first arrangement of familial line, God in Heaven was angered at Cain’s ignorance, for he had no heart to listen to God’s advice. The serpent was Cain’s master. And among all things living, Cain hunted and dominated. And there were many others of that lineage who produced evil in a way that was contrary to what God commanded. So, through Adam’s line, the spiritually reflective child Noah was asked to build an ark to save humanity from God’s wrath.

“Adam, who was good and whole in the garden of Eden, knew of God’s Word through communication with Him. But Cain ignored his heart and only followed his mind. Eve was absorbed into the darkness of her spirituality, as she questioned how much she needed to protect her life from evil, and ironically, Abel and Seth were of the redeeming seed that reflected God’s continued love for his creation.

“The world died in Noah’s lifetime, as God vanquished all the living bodies except for those on the ark Noah built. After forty days and nights of rain, the sinfulness brought about by Cain’s line was wiped out from the earth.”

The Living Spirit of Christ then introduced Mother Mary into the conversation. Whereas Christ spoke deep into me from his heavenly throne room, Mother Mary's spirit was lively in my thoughts and readily felt in my heart. I could almost smell the fragrance of roses, as though her spiritual presence filled the room with that scent.

She said, "Author, the evil in the world is absorbed by the heart. Eve, who did not question the serpent's claims about eating the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge, then understood the serpent's wrongdoing. So in spiritual light, she accepted its darkness. She asked to enter its belly, and her seed followed her into torment. And so, Adam, who was not yet of a mind or heart divided, followed her in that spiritual envy that brought the fall from God's grace."

The mother of Jesus then said, "I know that this concept of absorption or reflection of darkness and light, both natural and spiritual, seems complicated, but it is important that you try to understand. For when the natural light of Eve is absorbed by the darkness, Satan can tempt your heart, and therefore, your mind, making everyone around you susceptible to receiving your curses.

"In the heart, through which all things naturally flow, and blood is carried to bring nutrients to the mind and organs of the body, is where redemption is sought. And if the person is like Cain, they will ignore the Word of the Lord and live in darkness from the heart. The natural light will therefore inhabit the spirit of the warrior, who hunts, instead of the mark, who is preyed upon. The spiritual light, on the other hand, is reflected on by the father. Therefore, the partner for Cain in the game of life was opposed to him, and

the father encouraged discipline, seeking redemption in the mind, heart, and soul of the seed for that sinfulness. And another partner was found for Cain, and that wife was introduced to Eve and Adam, in the cyclical storyline in which all humans live and multiply.”

Mother Mary continued, “It was for the Spirit of Jesus to inform Eve that the world was to be cleansed of her first-born son, Cain, through the eventual flooding. And Cain, his wife, and his children ignored that creation plan. And so it was that God made the first covenant with Noah, where God would save humanity, and Noah and his family would care for the earth.

“The moment when Satan began to hold a dark and deathly intent toward all things natural is when he first impacted the lives of God’s children. But so it went that Noah saved humanity to please the Heavenly Father. And Noah, his wife, and his children, and all the birds and beasts kept on the ark, did please God.”

Said Mother Mary, “The line of Jesus came from Seth, who was a gift from the Father to Eve and Adam. And through time, generations repented for the evil that was absorbed as darkness into the heart, and therefore, the minds of men, as they attempted to oppose the serpent’s dominance in the universe.

“All humanity is of this order and the line of Adam and Eve, and therefore, natural and spiritual light find their balance in all offspring. It is largely this balance of will and servitude that determines which master will be followed. Men and women often reflect the ignorance of each other. That is, until they form a new partnership with a new person,

and they replant spiritual ideas through their own line of children, redeeming the sins of the initial family.

“The partners in the game of life, and in the trials, will therefore at times either be fought or adored. And understanding how natural light is reflected and spiritual light is absorbed will help you understand how things are positioned in society’s order. For, just as it was in the temptation of Eve, our will is tempted in the heart, and therefore, the mind. And we can either act according to our own self-interest or exercise the discipline to listen to our spiritual understanding, which has been manifested in the mind, and therefore, the heart, through successive generations of partners and children.”

Mother Mary then said, “This natural order is passed down through the children as trials in which a person’s worship of Christ, the redeemer, can protect them against the Morning Star. And when, in the end of days, Christ the Redeemer becomes strong enough to bring God’s spiritual light to all the living beasts, birds, and people, he will then judge the Morning Star, the evil one, Satan himself. And once the evil is cast out of the heavens, the Spirit of Jesus will become whole again.

“The covenant in which Noah accepted responsibility to protect the earth from the wrath and punishment from God affected all generations of Eve’s children.” In Heaven, Mother Mary wept for the suffering of all Eve’s children, and her own children, who faced these trials and ignored God’s Word, for the tortured will always rebel, even through the wrath, but the twisted ways of the wicked will be straight-

ened as they choose to follow the path to God's heavenly city, the New Jerusalem.

"The Morning Star, who is evil incarnate, will then be brought to the stand to answer before Jesus at trial. However, it is possible for the Morning Star to be redeemed, if he accepts Christ in his mind, and therefore in his heart, through testifying about his own disgrace and being saved by God. All beings can be saved in the light of Christ, including the serpent. For everything in its belly, drawn there through the fall of Eve and Adam, will find light once more in the garden of Paradise.

"But if the Morning Star ignores the compassionate offer of salvation through Christ, he will seek to multiply his power by finding partners in the universe and tempting them, particularly through lust and greed. These temptations, however, will be cleansed from the universe, just as Cain's line was eradicated by God. And Jesus will end all communication with the Morning Star, casting him into nothingness, where he will never be heard from again by the heavens, since God is peace. And the Morning Star will suffer eternal torture, finally accepting his own lunacy in a state of nothingness."

Mother Mary then said what the final outcome would be, regardless of which of the two possible scenarios should occur. "All of life will then circle back once more, becoming completely spiritual. The senses will ignore the natural light, and all light will be accepted as oneness with us, the heavenly realms, headed by the Father Almighty, giver of mercy."

Chapter Fourteen

Goodness within the Community Heart's Lower Feminine Chamber

Mother Mary then provided insight into an important spiritual duality: how the Spirit of the Lord Christ is one with that of the Morning Star. “Author, the devil inside you is one with all things human and all things evil. That is, humans cannot follow our ways in Heaven, given the evil they create. Therefore, the heavens provide mercy in the world to combat the devil. But all are welcomed into the heavens, even those who emerge from the hellfire and sulfur found in the belly of the beast.”

She continued, “Through Jesus, those who have been inspired to seek him out have been given a voice. And many who accepted him into their spirits then called out, proclaiming, ‘The Messiah is coming.’ Therefore, people throughout the ages have heeded this and accepted Christ’s spirit into their hearts and minds. But Satan hears these calls too. And, as Heaven often reveals its plans to combat the devil, Satan works to defeat their efforts by finding new ways to tempt people.

“It may sound backward, but it is through the movement of restoration and peace that the devil will draw some people into the darkness. I will use one significant story in your lineage to explain this. David was walking around on the roof of his palace when he saw a beautiful woman who was bathing. And, after learning that the woman, Bathsheba, was

the wife of a Hittite soldier named Uriah, he called for her to be brought to him.

“David and Bathsheba slept together, and later, they found out that she was carrying his child. David then had Uriah summoned from battle and tried to manipulate him into lying with Bathsheba. When his attempt failed, David abused his power to ensure that Uriah the Hittite would be killed during battle. Then, David took Bathsheba as a wife.

“The Lord sent the prophet Nathan to David to discuss how his actions were being judged. In this story, as David’s actions had displeased the Lord, Nathan told David that trouble would arise from within his own house. And, as David had committed his sinful acts in secret, the Lord said that He would show his vengeance in broad daylight, before all of Israel. Therefore, after seven days, the child that Bathsheba carried and bore for David died.

“After David acknowledged that he had sinned against the Lord, and through this act of repentance, the Lord removed his sin. David and Bathsheba received the Lord’s love again, and they welcomed a new son, Solomon. And, ultimately, Solomon ruled over the kingdom in divine judgment. Thus, though the devil’s efforts to corrupt King David’s line had been thwarted, he would ultimately gain another foothold, through the new generation.”

Mother Mary explained, “The first time God appeared to King Solomon in a dream, when Solomon had the chance to ask for anything he desired, he asked for wisdom. And because this pleased the Lord, Solomon’s wisdom became great, and he could discern between good and evil, and he governed the kingdom of Israel with spiritual reflection and

keen understanding. And as his reputation as a wise leader spread, the influence of his kingdom spread throughout all kingdoms from the Euphrates to the land of the Philistines, all the way to the border of Egypt.

“It was in King Solomon’s judgment to build friendships between kingdoms to manage peace with neighboring powers. However, just as the Israelites had been warned before, Solomon was warned against marrying foreign women, as it would allow King Solomon’s heart to turn away from God to follow their gods. And in the same spirit as King David, when he sinned and angered the Lord, King Solomon repeated the life patterns of his father.

“Time and time again, the hearts of men have proven to be susceptible to being led by women to false beliefs, which then lead to the Devil. Solomon dismissed the Lord’s advice, and loved many foreign women, including the princess of Egypt, the daughter of the pharaoh. He loved women from the lands of Moabite, Ammonite, Edomite, Sidonian, and Hittite, among others. And Solomon’s heart became lost from the Lord and given to new gods. And so it was that the Lord promised that, in time, the kingdom of Israel would be torn away from the line of Solomon.

“Author, the ways in which the world is influenced by Satan are countless. The death he brings is fierce, and the Lord will be alerted if you turn your efforts toward driving undeserving men toward death. But the Messiah will come in the future. And in spirit, he will redeem all men and women who fear God Almighty.”

Mother Mary continued, “The Spirit of the Lord, therefore, is a blessing bestowed upon your ancestral house. And

you will find that much of the evil in your life entered through your lineage, going back to Eve and Adam, and extending into your lifetime. And you will begin to witness how evil can be taken to trial, in which the Lord will answer through the living surroundings, just as he did for David. And his love will be born again, over and over, for you and your family, just as it was for David and Bathsheba when God gave life to Solomon.

“And this is what you should focus your mind on, Author, and reflect on how it affects your present world: All things that should occur by the Lord’s hand will come to pass. The women who love you, and who you love back, should descend from a line that loves the holy family and the Lord’s interventions, as the Lord will bring love through all things good and holy.

“Across the planes of the earth, deception is carried out by Hell’s fallen angels. They combat good and holy interventions through their hidden and secret acts. They know that people will deny the Lord to experience the pleasure of greedy and lustful indulgences. Therefore, the Lord’s judgment will bring those who repent from a darkened prison to the light, and for all things that occur after, people will be held accountable at trial.

“The Morning Star, the incarnation of evil, will be absorbed into the light of the Lord if the family members who keep the family connected to God stay holy. And the Lord’s blessings for the family will increase as the light radiates between everyone in the family, reaching across generations. The trials reveal how the devil attempts to manipulate family members, offering them moments of power and pleasure in

exchange for their refusal of His abundant love. And somewhere along the way, as you and your families and your tribes fight each temptation and every curse, as Satan tries to gain a foothold in your path and lead you to resist your love for God Almighty, you and your families and tribes will stumble.

“It is your line, of the house of Judah, that will carry your voice into the future. And the memories of your own heart will cause you to falter, unless your spirit is made incredibly strong. But you will develop the spirit of a warrior to combat your hostile surroundings, which will attempt to bring you down, either by the sway of temptation or by the sword. And the next generation of children will have a testimony to follow.

“My son Jesus will be pleased with this outcome. For if you refuse to go along with the nefarious plans of the immoral people in your surroundings, and you continue to move along with the Lord, you will bring his glory to others. The Morning Star and his flock of fallen angels will try to corrupt your house, but you will speak out in your surroundings, announcing how good the Father Almighty is.”

Mother Mary said, “So it was that Eve was blamed for placing her trust in the serpent. However, Adam placed his trust in her and validated her fear about needing protection from the Heavenly Father. And so it was Adam’s own pride that made him think himself more than what the Lord had willed, which was simply an instrument of everlasting peace in the garden.

“And so it will be with you, over and over in cyclical time, that this narrative of Adam will be considered. You will

choose between trusting others in society or listening to the heart's conscious voice to follow your Lord. And in waiting for the Lord to reclaim his kingdom on Earth, you will fall as you spread new thoughts of other gods into the world.

"And the political orders that stifle religion and exalt a spirit other than the Lord's will drift further and further away from his message of truth. Through Jesus, the world will be redeemed of sin. He will offer to absorb the darkness that arose in Israel into his body and blood. And all things redeemed in their Messiah will be offered back to God as a tribute to demonstrate their faith in Him."

Mother Mary then said, "It has happened in the past, that the prisoners of darkness who were blind were given this sight. And the miracles of life on Earth were revealed through his lowliest servants, like the man named Lazarus. And through their rebirth, all who were ill were given a chance to accept a new spiritual understanding, through which the Lord promised them everlasting life in Heaven.

"But even though God offered them His grace and promised them everlasting life, they feared his acceptance of their sins. There were even some in Israel who rejected His covenant and continued to pray to other gods. The Messiah was living in their present time, and they did not try to hide their worship of these gods from him. These men and women in Israel lived according to a different standard than that of Jesus Christ.

"And he did not hide his teachings from them, or from the authorities, as he did not fear their accusations. The religious leaders of Israel then handed Jesus over to the Romans, and under that political order, Jesus was put to death. And in

time, over and over again, they have taken a combative stance to defend these actions. But their ability to stand up for good and fight against evil was weakened, as the devil had gained a foothold by learning about how they continued to lead their people.

“King Solomon, who fell from grace himself when he defied the Lord’s will, then led the kingdom of Israel to defy the Lord’s will and fall from its purpose. People across the earth have followed in their footsteps, walking away from God when there is a battle of darkness and light. And the devil will play on these emotions, using the confusion in the world against itself, time and time again, as long as it proves to be an effective strategy. Thus, in the Romanesque political order of Jesus’s time, the people fought against their own purpose as well. And the devil used everything outside of Jesus’s story to weaken the people through manipulation.

“The political order of the Roman Empire continued to be dominant in the area past the time of Jesus. And Christianity developed based on the shared belief in Jesus, as well as the shared values of unity and stability. Initially, the emperors, who wanted to be worshiped as all-powerful beings, attacked Christianity as irreverent and a threat to their own power and territory. And in time, generations under the Roman Empire came to see the emperor as God’s representative on Earth, and the state became deeply intertwined with the Church.”

Mother Mary then explained, “Before Jesus was born, social and spiritual orders were formed as the members of a society followed the leaders and the examples they set in their patterns in everyday life. However, many people now

see religious order as something of a historical legend and not something present in their living world. But those who accept Jesus into their lives wait for his return so that he may restore the order in society. And by the grace of God, he will bring just and equitable order back into the world, just as he has done so many times before, as when those leaders ignored his Word and welcomed foreign gods into their hearts and minds.

“In the story of King David and Bathsheba, it was shown how the devil may be led to redemption and forgiveness, only to attack the weaknesses of people once more and continue to tempt and prey on humanity. And as the people falter in their natural awareness and stop listening to their hearts, they fail God over and over again, in cyclical patterns in life. But it will come to pass that another Messiah will appear, and Jesus will offer himself to the world once more. And God will allow the trial of the Morning Star to occur.

“The lineage of Eve and Adam, throughout human history, has experienced setbacks while attempting to reach out to be saved by God the Almighty. And in that linear forward and backward storyline, where all things are evolving physically and returning spiritually in a oneness with the Father, He will expect His son to love all those who praise his everlasting power and glory.”

Mother Mary continued, “Each successive generation in this linear approach then is on trial on behalf of the Morning Star. And in the final days of humanity, the oneness with the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit in Heaven will become evident. According to a cyclical covenant, people will walk a path with God, going from crooked to straightened. The

good and holy will become aware of the damage that ignorance has brought upon their house. And in time, as the devil searches for weaknesses in characters from all generations, he will either accept forgiveness through the Lord Christ and render the separation between himself and God nonexistent, or he will continue to lure people toward downfall and damnation.”

Mother Mary then said, “Although Jesus was slain, it is his promise that he will reemerge and return to the world. Much like He did when the sons were slain in the world, and the Holy Father provided a redeemer to absolve people of sin, He will offer humanity peace in his kingdom of Heaven in this world.”

Chapter Fifteen

Goodness within the Community Heart's Upper Masculine Chamber

Mary, the mother of Christ, said, "Author, through the Spirit of Jesus, you are a child of God the Father. You see his eyes watching over you in your background, and you witnessed his presence in the garden, walking with you and explaining the significance of his life.

"Now that I am speaking with you, I will explain the heart. As it is in the heart's chambers that we all live out the story of our faith. But we follow the advice of others blindly, and we boldly ignore the intuitive suggestions we receive. Therefore, it is important for you to understand how the heart takes ideas that originate in the subconscious and develops them until they are brought to fruition before you in your surroundings.

"As the mother of Jesus, I was led by the angels and encouraged to follow their advice. And in those moments when the angels mentioned to me that the acknowledgement of their presence in the heart would manifest their presence in the world, I accepted their wisdom. These angels came to me to announce that I would bear the Son of God, the Spirit of the Lord Christ embodied in human flesh. And in that physical form, from the time of his birth, he would reign over the house of Jacob forever as a descendant of David, and his kingdom will have no end.

“A story developed within my mind as the Spirit of the Holy Ghost quelled my disbelief about this miracle, the birth of the Son of God. But disbelief remains in how we, as humans, are ignorant of the Almighty and His acts of love and grace in the world, which have surpassed all expectations.

“The Spirit was part of the subconscious reality of my son, as he grew in my womb. That Spirit, which I did not command, then became my flesh as well. And, as I had not been touched by any man, I gave birth to my son in a small, cold room in an unwelcoming place. But once he was born, the love of God was apparent, and peace was felt in all the land.

“The living, breathing Son of the Father was filled with wonder and joy. And in the moment when all things materialized in a harmonious account, the story of the Lord Christ arriving to live among his people, the people, beasts, and birds all over the world accepted his greatness. And as the Spirit causes a shift in the subconscious hearts and minds of those in the surroundings, those roots of the Spirit of a subconscious nature, then, are accepted into the earth. This energy becomes anchored into our earth, and all who listen to their intuition and follow it in their sensemaking can share in the awareness as the pulse of life radiates. This pulse, which beats with the rhythm of the acts of life, harmonizes the planet. All things then become a perceivable reality through the heart and mind.

“Miracles are accepted in much the same way. The spirit of God the Almighty can transform any plane through his

breath. And through reflection, we understand and accept this new miraculous part of the creation story.

“The testimony of Jesus then exemplifies the miracles the Father has performed in the world. And his obedience to his Father shows his acceptance of the spirit that moved him. Through his miracles, he showed the grace of God in the world. Jesus was able to cure the cursed and the infirm. He accepted the illnesses into his heart, and the light from the heavens would work through his body. He carried the heavenly light in him. And when we have a personal communion with him, and we let that light in, we embrace his loving Spirit in our minds.

“In our hearts, we are moved to share our love generously. Our cups overflow with His grace throughout all generations for those who deservedly receive His light. And in the Lord Jesus Christ, He sent forth His own flesh to the earth to live among us, to manifest a path forward and guide us into oneness through his miraculous healing. And in the time it takes to realize that He lives through us, we, His subjects, can acknowledge more love and light in ourselves through our spiritual connections with Him.

“This is where the miracles of faith occur in the surroundings. For, when we seek not our own gains and glory from faith, but an understanding of the Father’s words, we gain a new perspective of the future. That intuitive insight of the heart, awakened by the light of Christ, then allows us to understand the guidance provided by our spiritual family as well. And by connecting with us in the heavens through a tunnel of light, love, and laughter, our presence will be felt in the world by others.

“Author,” said Mother Mary, “The upper masculine chamber of the heart is responsible for the expression of this quality of the heart, ensuring that all things involved in spiritual recognition and the communication between the Lord God and organized society can occur. And by engaging this chamber more, people who listen to what’s going on in their own lives when they pray will then begin to listen to the lives of other people in their prayers.

“Through these listening skills, they bring harmony into the world. And engaging in the actions as directed by the angels will help them to bring miracles to fruition. These miracles were exemplified by Jesus Christ, such as the time he brought his dear friend Lazarus back to life four days after Lazarus died. And this miracle foreshadowed his own return to the earth, as he will return to a heavenly kingdom as a messiah once again.

“Author, this knowledge I’m providing could help your light manifest through your words and make our ideals easier to reach. In a baptism at the angelic fountain before the throne of Jesus, the Holy Ghost received a gift, and when the angels speak to us, we can look to the source of the fount to see our cups become filled with the Holy Ghost. This concept may seem difficult to understand, but I will explain.

“The light of spiritual existence is shared through the heavens. And at its throne sits the Lord Jesus. So, when angels appear through the spiritual light in our hearts, that love can take us back through the gate in our hearts and back to the other end of that tunnel, where we will find his kingdom in Heaven. We will recognize that path and be guided to the other side of it by our guardian angels. For it is in the garden

of Paradise in this kingdom where most people will meet the Lord Jesus, God the Father, or the Holy Spirit and acknowledge our existence in the heavenly trinity. Author, there is more than one avenue leading to the realization of this miracle of rejoining their presence, and once it happens, our faith in God can then manifest in the world.

“The orders of the natural world and the spiritual world are then determined by those who make decisions for the community, and for the society at large. And as our spiritual identity advances through our growing bonds with Christ, we see the distance closing between heavenly rule under Jesus and the failing political orders that disavow him. Therefore, you must pray for your leaders to build the story of his creation plan into our world and work toward integrating the co-creation plan of each person into their life by purposefully accepting and living out the Word of God.

“Church members understand that the Word of the Lord directs all people to love God first and to love our neighbors as God would love us.

“Author,” said Mother Mary, “the end of the world is undetermined and subject to the miracles each man and woman will follow to live in line with Jesus, spiritually. And in the spirit of recreating a society closer to oneness in Christ, we will understand how to better govern the earth through his ideals of compassion and equity.

“Through the reckoning of Jesus Christ, people will express their spiritual light throughout every kingdom; thus, they have been referred to as candlesticks by the prophets. This reflection of spiritual light into the world then mirrors the reflective nature of those self-absorbed, for when the

spiritual light of the heart is given the power to recreate the story of Jesus Christ, through tunnels connecting all in harmony, the minds of those who are self-absorbed will change, becoming less willful.

“And over time, as those around you generate light, together as a church, unified and whole, the serpent will lose his ability to craft temptations and deploy them through the wicked fallen angels.

“Author, the time it takes to make meaningful strides based on the Word of God can be instantaneous if the spirit is willing. But many will fail to act – to even try to change the rule of the land – due to a weakness of character and peer pressure, which can then perpetuate the prevailing belief system. However, as we obey the two great commandments of Jesus – to love God and love our neighbors as God loves us – the additional commandments of God will unfold as the rule of the land in life: that we shall not kill, covet, commit adultery, steal, take God’s name in vain, worship false idols, or bear false witness, and that we shall keep the Sabbath day holy and honor our fathers and mothers.

“The social fabric of life is rooted in the practices based on our belief system, for which the commandments provide a moral compass. Our belief system, influenced by our intuitive reasoning, is thus intertwined with the rules which guide us in our decisions. And this is why the good and holy people follow the Lord as servants in heart and mind.”

Mother Mary then said, “All things work together in harmony. And in our spiritual nature, we reflect where those who are absorbed in their physical life can be influenced, where the world is devoted to its own opposition to religious

ideologies, but where it can be turned back toward oneness with the church and toward the light of Christ.

“God gives His grace in our hearts and minds. And when we decide how to live purposefully through His creation story, our suffering will subside. For the self-absorbed are naturally fit for being competitive. However, the influence of the spiritually inclined will grow within their surroundings as they acknowledge the inspired words they hear and let these words guide their acts.”

Chapter Sixteen

Goodness within the Community Heart's Lower Masculine Chamber

Mother Mary proclaimed that all who were in the kingdom of Heaven were rejoicing, for being there in spirit meant being accepted in the Lord Jesus's heart. She explained, "Spiritual communion with his heart, where the light is immensely brilliant, will lead to a changed mindset. And each person moved by their servitude of the Holy Father will be led by the Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, and they will remain restless for peace as long as there is suffering in the world.

"However, it was his desire to bring this suffering to an end that brought Jesus to the earth and subjected him to trial by the Morning Star himself. Jesus performed acts to conquer sinfulness through miraculous healing in his lifetime. And when Satan tried to tempt Jesus into turning away from his Heavenly Father, Jesus reminded the great deceiver of his own sins.

"Jesus had an understanding of the sin that people absorbed into their bodies. He accepted them, not only as they were, riddled with sin and disease, but as they could be, without that darkness blocking their hearts and minds. And when he was accepted as the Savior, the demons saw the power of his love, and they could not help but turn to him and serve him themselves. The Lord Jesus came to this earth to share the light of the heavens through the love in his heart

and to accept sinfulness into himself and carry the world to the heavens.

“Now, sinfulness is a prisoner of its own making because these demons refuse to leave their own cages. Darkness is slow, and ignorance does not propel the demons toward the heavens. Instead, it casts these demons into the order that was created to act in alignment with Satan. Therefore, this order, this leviathan whose segments are linked together by chains, is both a prison and a prisoner that moves in sync with the head of the serpent. It is where all things unholy stem from. And all members of society who follow the order are trained to think and act like each other, working together like a war machine. And the justification underlying their reason and logic is evil incarnate.

“Satan is not willing to move from his position of power. The serpent leads all who are fallen angels or who were always demonic toward irrational goals, such as creating war for self-preservation. This illogical motivation creates warriors of two different natures – those of a combative type and those of a loving type – and their loyalties are divided between two masters.

“Author,” said Mother Mary, “the peer pressure that leads people to be combative is evil, as it enslaves them and leads them to war. The leviathan sets the rules of war, and those who accept these rules and engage in war will pay with their lives. They are enslaved by their pursuit of perpetuating a political system that is organized in opposition to the commandments of Jesus, which are based in love. All who help build and protect this system are caged by darkness, as it is

the civic order of a society engaged in Lucifer's war on humanity.

"In that war, Lucifer will slay all who stand before him. The leadership of those who are of evil incarnate work against the good and impose pressure on their peers, trying to divide their churches, mosques, and temples. And by following these leaders in darkness, the world has been led toward political disaster.

"According to the storyline of Jesus, he lived on the earth around 2,000 years ago and said he would come back as the Messiah once more to help people as they fight the temptations of Lucifer and Azrael. From the revelations of Jesus Christ, told through John, we learned that the Antichrist, empowered by the devil, would move throughout the world, leading a global political empire.

"And in the apocryphal revelations, John of Patmos prophesied that the kingdoms of the church would reinstate their efforts to cast out the wicked by championing Christ's vision of victory. John said that the church elders in Heaven would give up their crowns, casting them to the heavenly throne in victory over Satan. And it is through the light of Heaven, and the seed of all humanity through the line of Adam and Eve, that Jesus offers his love in their hearts.

"But the demonic will hunt, leaping and jumping through the darkness of the hearts that are ignorant of Jesus Christ and have not yet bent their knee before his greatness. And martyrs will be made of those who believe in the Lord Jesus Christ as the coming Messiah. All those who fight, within and outside themselves, will be doomed in their sinfulness until love meets them through their own salvation, as

their logic is both a strength and a curse. Jesus walks with all who love him and listen for his guidance in their spiritual intuition. And even those who run away from Christ can still fight as part of his heavenly forces if they rejoin the church by reliving that evil of theirs and repenting.

“Author, the miracles of Jesus have the power to pull Satan into the church, where all who are good and who love one another can direct their prayers and their vision of victory against his evil acts. In this reflection of sinfulness, Satan would have the chance to recognize himself as one who is torturous.

“The trial through which all things are made heavenly, the trial of repenting, is one which humanity itself must accept. Since the days when Adam and Eve walked the earth, we have understood the role of the Messiah; his light and his spirit have guided us to this present moment. And in this moment, we can move either in a positive or a negative direction. In understanding the balance of the scales, we, as one church, can find peace in our lives.

“Retribution is still actively being sought for the sin of putting the Lamb of God in the grave. Those in the generations since his death have been through this trial to repent and to prove their love of the Heavenly Father. The elders who cast their crowns to Christ in Heaven were the model to follow, as they rid Lucifer and Azrael of their sinful ways. And this was Jesus’s victory, as the evil in the world was thwarted when his love was allowed to conquer sin completely.”

Mother Mary explained that the dragon, the serpent, the Man of Time, the Devil, Lucifer, and Azrael have all ap-

peared as expressions of evil, each representing the separation from God in Paradise, but each at different distances. And the image of evil incarnate, representing all evil fallen from the heavens into the universe in its entirety, has been referred to as the Morning Star. "Author, all of these different bodies, which carry the same hate and anger, are of the fallen angel, Lucifer. But it was the snake who was in the garden, tempting Eve and Adam. It is the Man of Time who is present for all sinful acts committed in the separation and absence of the Lord. And it is the dragon who accompanies the devolution of society, through which all things become lost in time without the heavenly light of Christ.

"By bringing to trial all those who have sinned, those who are reflective of the heart of Jesus can begin to see how the demons jump and leap across different chains of reason. And by this logic, the shadow devils attack different people simultaneously, exploiting every possible weakness to find greater separation from the Lord."

Mother Mary said, "A system or political order created to capture all evil and bring it to trial should be merciless. And the order of Lucifer should be held to answer for its actions. The questions posed by society that all things unholy must answer will allow us to logically defend our tribes and communities in warfare. And in war, just as in peace, the two greatest commandments of Jesus – to love God and to love our neighbors – should be followed.

"Over time, leaders of the church and state will begin to work together once more, and they will identify those successors who will continue to pursue the decisions that have been made. For the kingdoms that were named in Revelation

were merely regions on Earth that held significance for their heavenly forecasts when the Roman Empire ruled. But the Lord Christ will revive these kingdoms and bring them back toward a unifying light in their hearts once more to lead, not only in the order of society, but also in the development of intuitive communication on an individual level.”

Mother Mary continued, “Author, the current orders of politics and governance that keep matters of sovereignty and spirituality separate will destroy the people they claim to protect. This evil, which aims to consolidate power, ignoring the will of the people and disavowing the Lord Christ, is likely to fail. If this evil succeeds, Jesus will never return to his people on Earth because the elite and powerful will destroy it by fulfilling a doomsday prophecy before he returns.

“Author, God has a plan in place to thwart any political order from bringing this outcome to fruition. And through the Spirit of Christ, the Heavenly Father made it known that He would seize Satan during the end times and keep him muzzled for a thousand years. So it is that we are in the midst of a war between two masters for the people on Earth. And in the end times, the sovereignty of the state and church cannot coexist until the rules of our society follow the same theocratic belief system – one that prevents destruction to the earth’s environment by the Morning Star and ensures that the resources of the heavens will shower upon God’s people, as His begotten Son reemerges from the church once more as Messiah.

“Author, the devils are actively trying to fool everyone by convincing them to brand themselves as evil. This branding involves disavowing religion and redirecting belief, so

that the individual believes only in themselves, making them evil themselves. In this way, they can fulfill the part of one doomsday prophecy that says the family is to be destroyed by the Morning Star. He speaks in secrets to all mankind. And as his power grows and all things begin to perish, in the time before war breaks out and destroys humanity, the Morning Star will continue to dole out temptation and brand himself as the prophesied way forward.”

Mother Mary said, “Now that you see the vision of Jesus Christ, and you know what we are up against, you can rely on the resources you have in your surroundings to learn more. Keep bringing the Lord’s light into the hearts of those who deserve it, but be careful as you do so. And keep calling for the trial of humanity, as it is through these trials that the Lord Christ can answer prayers with the help of his church.

“The willingness to stand up for the belief system of the Lord is good and holy. And in time, we will understand how the light of the heart can avert the doomsday prophecy of the Morning Star. The Morning Star will then be recognized in his truest form as the Lord weighs the evil on the scales of many men and women. And as those who have been plagued by the Morning Star repent and are cleansed, that darkness will be collected and redirected back into the evil one.

“The people will belong to the goodness of the garden. And over thousands of years, we in Heaven will come into the garden of Paradise with the Messiah to help the people become established within the kingdom of Heaven on Earth.”

Mother Mary then told me that she had come to bring spiritual wisdom not only to me, but to all who experience

an earthly existence. And through the existence of relationships all over the world, and in the society that we hold close to our hearts, God the Almighty will remake our planet.

Section Three

A Trial for the Morning Star and the Devolution of our Civilization (-, -)

Chapter Seventeen

A dark figure stood before me; one whom I once called Daemon. This dysfunctional human, who hosted the harsh spirit of Azrael, is also known as the Antichrist. Through the dark figure, the spirit of Azrael said to me, “Author, it is by the workings of another worldly universe that you see my perspective.

“All things exist as part of a system of push and pull, or cause and effect, where everything is driven by battle, and attacks among individuals move them back and forth within their surroundings. For my sinister serpent father is the origin of all things in this universe, and my spirit is a deathly stare. Within my gaze are all things unholy. Look deep into my soul, and you will understand how corruption can take root in anyone, including yourself. My gaze sees past the surface and beyond the senses, to read the minds of all things corrupted.

“But now, Author, I will begin my account and testify to the Lord.”

Under the fiery eyes of the Lord, which looked on from behind me, witnessing every experience in my background and cherishing those that were holy, I prepared to look at Daemon. As I paused in preparation for the worst of all things unholy, the Lord said in my heart’s conscious voice, “Author, through me, you will receive redemption, and after that, you will be able to acknowledge what evil the Antichrist has absorbed in his body – the sinfulness and temptation. The level of his magnetism changes with each oc-

currence as he attempts to corrupt each person throughout their life. For he understands the twisted logic of those who become corrupted. And he understands the pure logic that those who do not resist the devil will worship him.”

I took solace in the fact that the Lord Christ was within me, and I could find redemption still in the gaze of those fiery eyes, though they were peering into the devil’s offspring. The Spirit of the Lord Christ said, “Author, I will help you strengthen the grounding of your faith. I will help you understand how the spiritual positions of others get shifted around, as if they were being blown about by a malevolent wind, making their actions seem out of character for them. But with a strong foundation, grounded deep in faith, you will stay true to me in your heart and mind.”

And with those words of faith anchoring my belief system in my love of the Spirit of the Lord Christ, I lifted my head, and I focused my gaze directly into the eyes of the Antichrist. In a steady voice, I said, “Daemon, you shall reveal to me what you are and how you have come into being in this universe. But I expect that your words and explanations will be born of wickedness.”

The Antichrist, in a voice that masked his mood of gloominess and hatred, said, “Author, your love for others is not the sentiment that moves my armies of fallen angels. You see, as I organize my thoughts and craft my plans, I carefully consider each person individually and view their situation in a light that helps my position in war and conquest. But your love for all people is a nicety that would not be conducive to any directive I might usher in to logically be accomplished. It is through the political orders that I find others willing to

live out my words of evil, and as these legions grow, they network with each other, building political alliances that fight together.

“The women in the beds of men are the rulers of such kingdoms. These men who are hardened in life need some reprieve, for their hearts are tortured. I offer their love to these women. And the women who bear children to continue the lineage are then the real sovereigns that empower the men to fight and enforce their own moral laws. For if I, in their logic, say that the next generation of the family is in trouble, the men will follow their hearts, and they will view the rules of others as bendable or corruptible.”

Daemon returned my gaze, staring back into my soul. I felt the spirit of Azrael, the angel of death, watching me with a thousand eyes. In his spiritual body, the eyes of all the fallen angels had amassed to oversee the foundation and development of the Antichrist’s political prowess. “We fight together in spirit as an army. And in the darkened worldview, the men have little to say to the women, so they bicker, often straining their relationships. If there are children, the arguments are both a cause and effect of the hurt being inflicted, and these struggles are avoided to protect the family first and the individual next.

“Through oneness with me, the fallen angels will show you what this corruption is like.” The Antichrist folded the space and time that encompassed all the perspectives of the fallen angels into one vision while looking into my eyes. The eyes within his body stared together in unison, like they were tracking my soul and drilling their thoughts into me through magnetic waves.

“Author, we turned the pages of your own book of life, back to a time when you were leading a life of sin. And you created a connection through your physical body, as you recalled events and moments in your history and guided us through that magnetic rendering of your memories. You were in your heart, looking on from a safe perspective, veiled by the Spirit of the Lord Christ, who was present in your background. But now, we bring you back into the worldly realm as we adjust that book of life. Let us look back to a chapter when you were first allowing the influence of evil to seep into your behaviors.

“Through the magnetic attraction and repulsion that form the memories kept in your physical body, that evil will rise inside you. And in the people who associated with that evil, you will acknowledge our fallen angels.

“Author,” said the Antichrist, “You ignored your father in your lifetime. And in that willful ignorance of the disciplined approach he encouraged, in your refusal to trust what was honest and truthful, you lied to yourself and others about your own faults.

“You made meaning of your faults through twisted logic and sensemaking. And you stayed in the web of deceit that was your hellish mental prison. Author, when I put your magnetic personality to the trial of the Lord’s judgment, your fiery father came to me and said he could subdue your visions of grandeur. The prospect of your life being simple and picturesque then became a cursed account. Not that your father fully comprehended the consequences of what he did, but he felt that it was important to discipline you to keep you from causing harm to yourself and others.

“Author, when the outlook of a person begins to align with my own, they become a soldier in the army of Satan. Your actions showed your opposition to your fiery father’s best judgment for your family and yourself. And independent of your family, you lashed out in opposition against your own wisdom.

“Individuals who forge their way alone in a competitive world are easier to pick off than those who create alliances in their faith. You did not attempt to test your father’s and mother’s advice. Instead, you carried the hurt that came along with the sense of feeling wronged by your family. In your torment, you rebelled, only to find yourself in a combative environment, where others preyed upon you because they saw your weaknesses.

“Author, you made mistake after mistake, only looking to solve the answer to this riddle of self-defeat by repeating the same method of goal setting. And as you talked things out with others, describing those weaknesses and goals out loud, the other people found wisdom in your father’s advice.”

Then Daemon, the Antichrist, looked more closely at my book of life. He flipped through pages and read about me and my life story for his own knowledge. “Author, in your efforts to avoid feeling hurt, you defend what you know and try to keep the truth from reaching other people’s eyes and ears. But your weaknesses are so apparent, I can pinpoint them for you easily.

“You run through the darkness of your heart to hide, searching for answers in other people’s perspectives. In essence, you jump or leap from your aching, darkened heart to other people’s hearts to find a cure for your curses. And

you will continue to run until the end of time, where the Spirit of the Lord would find you and say to you, how did you run from my light, love, and laughter? And, just as others have responded, you might say, 'The serpent did that, not me.' Or 'My father did that, not me.' Or 'The people in my surroundings did that, and not me.'"

The Antichrist then roared with laughter. Daemon caught sight of the expression that covered my soul, recognizing it as one of acceptance that I was refusing ownership of my own life story. "The fiery figure who was your father in your human life passed years ago. And he had a significant impact, leaving well-defined footprints for you to follow in discipline and love for your lifetime. You still feel his challenges in your truth, and truly, you have heard from him in spirit. Author, you have a lot of good characteristics, but you were a challenging person to raise. But from his spiritual death and rebirth, your father has realized that you were not fulfilling the Lord's intent for your purpose in your lifetime."

The Antichrist paused here. He closed the book of my life and handed it to the Devil, who then held it within his heart. I saw in the Antichrist's heart, spiritually, within Satan. He had a snout, horns, big wings, and the body of a goat. And he gnashed his teeth.

Daemon realized that I could see his weaknesses, and that I was seeing them for the first time; he had used his heart for a reason. Daemon, or the Antichrist, said, "In all things unholy, you have witnessed that I store my friends and my allies in my heart. These fallen angels are united in my vision and in my mind. I held your book in my left hand and kept it in my heart, but not out of love for you; it is a re-

minder of your trial. For you have made a habit of asking the Lord to put me on trial by marching me through the hearts of many. You try to capture the misery in the sinfulness that I cause so you can bring it to the light.

“Author, your story will be examined, particularly how you interacted with this sinfulness in a lifetime of hatred and self-deceit.

“Your fiery father had a noble mindset, but he was also corruptible. He provided for your family while living in surroundings with great competition for resources. He fought for your family and brought home wealth that made your standard of living well off, compared to many others.

“Author, the competitiveness that you have experienced is therefore a singular aspect of time. But when you felt it within yourself and chose to stay within yourself, you felt justified and correct in your admonishment and cursing of other people. But your actions, whether they were out of hurt or anger, were not enough for the Lord to intervene and save you. So you felt scared.

“But if you had understood how God worked then as you do now, you would have felt less fear, and you would have let His presence guide you. You continue to learn now, and you have continually steered yourself toward redemption. It is a shame that, as you made your way through things, you felt that your curse was a mental prison made by your mind. But you could not find your way out of my heart.

“I loathe people who hide behind their insecurities and do not attempt to better themselves in any capacity. Your insistence on being adored came from a dark place, and so you

thought that the love of a woman would make right your half as a man.

“Author, I saw that you sought this love to redeem yourself and because you wanted some level of power, and so I preyed on this weakness in your life. The highest position you imagined while you were growing up and maturing in your adolescence was to be in a relationship where you were thought of as a protector. This image of manhood was rooted in pride.”

The Antichrist continued to imprint himself on my memories, bringing up emotions that were lost but stored within my body. “The relationships you had with other people and with a partner were an illusion that I controlled. What you could not attain on your own, I held before you as a temptation. And with those temptations, I kept you secure in nothingness.

“So it was that you grew up alone and forgotten about. The very things that scared you into cursing others were your personal qualities that came across as desperate. So, it was that you, Author, were nothing to other people until you ignored them and pleaded for my attention and gave in to my temptations. And in that weakened state, all the shadows that you cursed other people with were reflected back to you in a psychological mirror.

“Author, there is no key or note that will allow you to leave this hell. Your book of life describes a constant struggle and the pain that I rendered. Meanwhile, your redeemer tried to enter your life by walking with you in spirit.”

Chapter Eighteen

The Antichrist then became a dragon. I didn't know if this was his most dangerous state, but he looked fearsome. He was a large, scaly red dragon with wings and horns on his head. And in that twisted position, lying on top of a mound of gold, he took what money I had and kept it. He could predict every effort I might make to regain control of my life. And so, I gave in to the temptations that were rooted in greed and lust, along with others who would perpetuate a centralized system.

Through razor-sharp teeth, the dragon said, "You have done nothing yet to prove your worth to the Lord. And this moment is where we shall start my trial before God. For it was in your lifetime that you testified to the Lord, identifying as a king and angel. And then you, who followed in the line of Judah, brought me to judgment to cleanse the world of me. But Author, can you make this case yourself in a world where madness and damnation are ignited by your insecurities?"

"I am the devil, the Morning Star, who is evil incarnate. And as the sinfulness awaits in you to be brought out into daylight by the Lord, I will move all of my game pieces to weaken your position even further. This rippling of the waves of ignorance, which make you feel so glorious and grand, will show you how my political organization of your neighbors will not only fuel the fighting of holy wars, but it will turn a financial profit.

“So, the leviathan, as you call your shackled neighbors who greedily and lustfully strive together with you for better standards of living, is an unholy case to try. That’s because you’ve been defeated by the devil, yet you resolve to escape any judgment from me. And my fearsome torture will shake your spirit so severely that you will be left in a maze that feels like your cage.

“This is the cage of yourself, ingrained in your genetic code. Author, your own mind will be a prison not only devoid of any feelings of love, but also empty of others’ feelings of kindness toward you, which you accept as their grace in your heart. Your resistance and your submission to this struggle are measured in your lifetime. And often, in the search for a route that fixes these emotional and political problems, is where you sit in silence.

“By joining the order of my leviathan, you would determine the outcome of this trial. However, I am pushing for your defeat, because you are a member of the house of Judah. Your family has fallen to me, over and over across the generations. But I am no longer watching quietly in your surroundings, as you have sought my attention. And as for your tribe, I will curse and damn your family and the people in your surroundings who cast loving prayers on your house.

“The darkness that falls on the house of Judah then is owing to your shaky faith in the Lord. You have experienced the fall from grace and exile from Paradise many times throughout the history of humanity. I can remember each of those moments, and I implore you to carry the feelings from these from your heart to your head. And your feelings for the partners who you felt were available to you in spirit,

who were part of that coordinated system that cast your moral bearings at issue before the Lord Christ, those will wax and wane. For it is memory that allows my control of all beings, through magnetic surges through the subconscious, and blocking the spiritual light of the heart.

“As for the Spirit of the Lord Christ, who will be the judge in the end times, he will ask for your faith in him once again. And you will only reveal my thoughts of wickedness once more. For on the earth is the physical reality of flesh. And the torment of the flesh is enough to allow anyone to deceive themselves and cheat themselves out of the rewards they would have for their service to the Lord.”

The dragon then held up what appeared to be a large sack of money – gold and silver coins – which I had coveted before. The riches he held made me realize that all the effort he put toward urging me to curse those around me in life was just an emotional bankruptcy of his spirit. He placed that bag, the talent of gold and silver coins, on the left side of the scale. And on the right-hand side of the scale, he placed a very small miniature statue that represented my own emotional spirit in my own idolized self. For I liked to be called an angel. And I liked to think of myself as a spiritual warrior for the Lord’s army of angels.

This game piece that resembled me had a frozen face that looked like a choir boy, reminding me of a lament that my mother probably had for me in her heart, as I was a child prone to self-hatred. But with the hope I had mustered of finding myself through that heart of my mother, I found more spiritual light in the devil’s heart to combat the torturer and purveyor of profits.

“Author, the political order that I am the so-called slave master of is driving pain into people’s emotional recall. And their memories, which hold onto that pain, allow them to be controlled by shadowy devils in the world. It is a mind game played on people because they will never know exactly who or what is in their heart or the hearts of people around them.

“So, your trial is such that you will feel like correcting everyone around you, as the sinfulness of those you encounter is enough to drive anyone to lunacy. The Son will be blocked from your mind, and the trial will begin with that lunacy where you have little to no spiritual understanding of other people. And as I am the master of the game on this earth, you will hear my answers to each confusing riddle that you encounter.

“Author, the leviathan is a nightmare which weakens people, making their anti-personalities susceptible to my curses. And I drive suffering into your life through other people’s actions, as I pull the strings and create chaos for my own entertainment. The suffering is rendered in a karmic pattern that you might recognize as a pattern of growth through overcoming adversity, but be prepared for another wave of tumult, full of temptations and moments meant to sink you.

“The anti-personalities that are chained together, the weaknesses of people’s character that are linked and noticed by others in life, these are curses. It is make-believe to find that sound logical analysis restrains these people in life. For you will see that those who come across as highly intelligent fail to understand that evil can penetrate their awareness. They develop their sense-making skills in pursuit of admon-

ishing evil, and yet, they aspire to understand and emulate the weakened state of other men and women.

“Author,” said the dragon, who held my miniature statue in its left hand, “you are currently in my trial before Jesus. And the same methods I used to break people in history, to cause crimes against your savior, I have repeated with you. You will feel like you are in another universe while the ambitions of the people in your surroundings move as waves through your senses. But as you build your sense-making skills, you will become more intelligent than your neighbors.

“Your statue represents your position as a pawn, moving toward others in spirit. Back and forth, up and down, left and right, your projected place will require a thorough and thoughtful analysis.

“That game of life, and the trial of my spirit, is what your testimony to Jesus will amount to at the end of this story. And with an awareness of the workings of existing political orders, where all things emerge as unholy or holy, the heavenly Kingdom may be brought closer to fruition. That is, by your tenacity to prove yourself right, and therefore the world around you unstable, you will look upon the surrounding world through the lens of political power.”

The dragon looked inquisitively at me, as I had flinched. I did not know much about political order, except that a regime shift, though it promises improvement, would be complex and difficult to implement; therefore, everyone would resist that overhaul of the system. Likewise, even with the implementation of a new system in the kingdom of Heaven for the Lord, people would automatically fight against it.

“Author, your anti-personality, the weaknesses in your spiritual character, can lull you to sleep, where your passion to serve the Lord loses priority. And, while you once challenged my authority and took me to task in your understanding of the Lord, now you overthink the personalities you face in trials challenging their worldviews. It is daunting to see, feel, smell, taste, and hear the evil around you. And the ability to affect that is a power that is much more in my purview than yours. I can tempt others through their sense of well-being and living standards, and I can break your sense-making skills even by torturing others.

“Therefore, Author, playing your game of analyzing characters and weaknesses with a systematic strategy will only prove to me that your intelligence is lower than mine. That is, you will rely on your faith in Christ to maneuver against my resounding wisdom. And in the details that you do not foresee, I will find an escape from your spiritual knowledge or the light in your consciousness. Does that intimidate you?

“Having a vision alone is not power. You will learn that, to induce any movement on the living game board that I play, I hypnotize those who are aware of their grounding and stance into delivering my messages. And you will begin to attempt a strategy in opposition by playing on power by gaining the acceptance of others. That is, you yourself will begin to build an army and coalition, as a political order for the Lord.”

The dragon laughed at this because he could not fathom the testimony of light, framed in a scholarly way, to move anyone into taking a stance against him. “Author, while you work on that move, you will suffer horribly. As you work to

understand your savior better, I will use the same tactics I've always used to slay his attempts to redeem the world over, and you will lose your sanity over and over again. Your mind will falter, and your flesh will weaken. And in lust and greed, you will begin to lose the spiritual fight against me, your master.

"You will understand how the mind is twisted around emotional pain. And even after making your legacy and life story available to all, these lessons will be lost to the world over time. I will bring war to all of your savior's people, and I will ultimately win.

"Author, my plans of conquest involve using the fallen and wicked angels to overthrow Heaven. And the end of God will come with my mastery of His people. For you see, as they go to war with my fallen angels, the good and righteous people will be forced to face me. But they will get lost and forget about the goodness of their savior once they meet my gaze. For I will hypnotize all the earth, and I will conquer the heavenly angels in their weakened state of mind. The plan is rather simple. But plans are just that.

"God saw that you listened to His word, and He sent you to intervene. But through your spirited actions and your efforts to stave off a state of lunacy of the mind, you have become lost in darkness in the heart. And as you continue to fight to stay aware in life and support Him in Heaven, you risk sinking deeper into the waves of a polluted ocean of the universes.

"Author, the workings of political orders, which shift back and forth between active and reactive, are aligned with my mindset. Many people in the universes are in a moral

slumber, and they rip and tear apart and then repair their surroundings in an attempt to understand their own books of life. I read those universal stories, and I take each soul to my afterworld of damnation whenever possible. And the fire burning in my raging heart will fuel the hatred and war continually waging against God in Heaven.

“As I gaze into your soul through the words I have read in your book of life, I will use your written account of his narrative to fight your savior, Jesus Christ.”

The silence around us was substantial, as the dragon was fiercely opposed to any idea of learning of the Savior’s power in the universes. It was because of his vanity, which I had heard in his laughter before, that he would ignore my explanations of my sense of accomplishments in the Lord. And as he held me fixed within his gaze, he assured me that I would fail to identify with the Lord Christ.

Chapter Nineteen

From outside my soul, the Morning Star looked through the universes and back into my spiritual vision. "Your spiritual father has given you advice. And when you received the revelatory admissions found in the Christ's fiery eyes, you felt superior to others in the world," he said,

"That superiority will be challenged through battle and conquest. And through me, the total sum of all evil will be looking not just upon your own life, but the lives of all those who surround you. I will engage in dealmaking and move the game pieces on the board in answer to their desires. And all mankind will feel the inertia of my forces as I surround you all in pain. And if you can accept that pain, and blow to your ego, you will be tortured in a reaction of disordered reasoning. For lunacy will come from accepting my own sinfulness through the absorption of your willpower.

"You have shown that you understand that you are not perfect. And yet, through the love of the Christ, you will endure his passion and bear his cross. You bear me in your body, and his love in your spirit. But, to break through to natural or spiritual realities, or perhaps to both..." His words trailed off, as if he were caught off-guard, and the Morning Star, the embodiment of all evil in the form of a snake, looked bewildered. For a moment, he was riddled with an account that did not line up with his expectations. It seemed to be an anomaly to him, and he glared off into space.

I spoke to my fiery father about what had caused the Morning Star to stop gloating so suddenly. My fiery father

looked through the heavens, from the garden of Paradise, where my tree of life had sprung. "My son, you convinced the serpent that you have the willpower to see through the pain and torture and stay loyal to the Spirit of the Lord Christ. When we look into the serpent's heart, it seems like the reality of his fall was acknowledged through the sunlight that he followed into the universe."

My fiery father whispered to me in spirit, "My son, your willingness to serve is from the heavenly side of your heart, through which you were baptized in spirit before the waters that drained into the crystalline fount of the Lord. All things glow in the radiance of the sun and the Morning Star. And yet, you just married the two lights together, though one is positive and the other negative, and expected him to acknowledge this.

"The openly combative quips of the Morning Star were meant to shake your growing inner strength right from the outset. He candidly explained his laws of temptation to defeat any willpower you might have to support the Lord. He wanted you to sense his presence and be constantly aware of him, drawing on him as a source of energy. His evil ideas travel from him to the subconscious, and are realized in conscious behaviors, through his dark magic, hypnosis grounded in space that is frozen to him. Therefore, he needs your mind to remain filled with negativity and constantly focused on that awareness of him so that you will follow through with his impulses."

My fiery father, who has passed, then spoke about the positive aspects of the universes. "You feel the pulses around you in waves. These pulses are both negative and positive,

and your acceptance of them involves an action between the natural and the spiritual. Your ability to feel through your body then rests on controlling the mind through the sounds heard in the heart. Over time, and with the help of the Holy Ghost, the sound waves that are felt as pulses from your surroundings will become internalized as a creation story coming into form.

“And as you struggle to understand your own nervousness, God will combat this in your central nervous system by sending His angels into your heart. They come into the world through His fount before the Lord’s throne. And in the world where the spiritual waters overlap with physical reactions, the chaos is put back into order through God’s intent. You must listen to His Word in your heart to understand the servitude He asks for from you.

“Son, the natural light that God separated from the heavens was like a furnace of combustive hellfire. And the universe split and multiplied into the order of the celestial stars. And he, who is the Morning Star, was woven throughout the universes and in the genetics of Eve and Adam.

“The birth of the Morning Star was also a death knell for his own glory. For his portrayal as a god was false, contrary to the righteous claim of the Heavenly Father. So, in combating the good and holy people, who hear and abide by serving Jesus Christ, the Morning Star will bring about his own death.”

And my fiery father closed with one last idea. “The evil in this universe, the serpent who was cast from the garden of Paradise only to blaze a path for the fall of Adam and Eve, will be cast out of Heaven for a final trial over humanity. And that was the anomaly that you just presented to the Morning

Star. His delusion of grandeur, in which he sees all humans as susceptible to his power, was made clear to him through your acceptance of the Lord Christ.”

My fiery father then took a few steps away from the light in which I had perceived him and let the heavens reclaim him. For my father’s spirit that had been animated with light, was then immersed into the background and lifted upward, back into the Lord’s Heaven.

The Morning Star looked right past me, still looking confused. But, as my father had told me, he was just realizing that the end of all things in the universes would usher in his hellfire. Before long, he put the thought aside and acknowledged me again. Behind him was a dark expanse of cosmic waves. But behind me, he could see the tunnel through my heart that connected me to the spiritual light of the heavenly realm. And the forces of negativity and positivity that I described earlier became his next topic of conversation.

The Morning Star said, “Author, you are able to sense both natural and spiritual light, the pulses of waves of cosmic energy versus the spiritual redemption of an evolving order of systems, and you breathe into this projected universe of yours. Tell me, how does that overlapping of heart and mind feel to you in your friendships?”

“For it is in oneness with the Holy Ghost that Jesus is all things spiritual. He became a man only to accept the sins of God’s children on Earth. And he did me a great disservice by reminding those who follow him that an organized life with prayer to the Father offers strength to fight my manipulations and temptations.

“So it is that the spirit of the Holy Ghost and I, as all evil incarnate, are in opposition. One part of your perspective is the evil that you call an anti-personality. And behind you, in your background, the Lord’s fiery eyes provide strength of character, which you internalize through the intuition of a conscious voice.

“The left side of your character is of logic. And the right side of your personality is of creativity. But, by using logic and creativity to organize disorder, or rearrange sensemaking patterns, will you be able to forge an effective governance in this trial of humanity and myself, as the devil and Antichrist?

“Spiritual light tunnels down to your heart from above. And all physical materials are grounded below you. However, your spiritual and natural characteristics are more in line with systems in development to advance the population for a greater world. And with these systems, which can be understood as an evolving system of actionable language used to advance the learning of the combination of light, you will succeed in your trial by me and the Lord.

“I will simplify these thoughts and let them occupy your subconscious as you ponder my riddles in the trial over Heaven and Hell. You once called upon the Lord to miraculously heal the world, and now, you will help me understand the systems I will be cursed to endure. For in those systems of governance, where the natural and spiritual light of the universes are acknowledged, all negativity and positivity will end in evil or good.”

The Morning Star’s eyes started to regain their focus past my human body, and he stared into the fiery eyes of my Lord Christ and said, “This is my communication of com-

bat and war in the world. I am speaking to this man, whom you know as an Author. But I speak out to the Lord and all His angels, to take heed of the Author's possible failure. If he co-creates a story that is loose and crooked in spiritual undertaking, and writes a governance system that leaves people vulnerable to my warcraft, then he will allow an ending of hellfire for many. And as I exact my own justice of death upon the human race, this trial will end with the tactics of the fallen angels proving to be insurmountable for the spiritual ideology of the heavens.

"Therefore, the political leviathan that determines the governance of mankind will ultimately usher in death or life, wrong or right, and illness or health in the world, for those will be the horsemen unleashed by the Antichrist rising in the world. And the slaves will be those who have listened to me and given in to my temptations, as they have weakened characters.

"I ask the Lord and his Father, who are both the highest sanctuary in the heavens, why they do not intervene. For it is repeated in history that I find a way to outmaneuver people and win in games of plight and war." The Morning Star, who was still in the form of the serpent, paused for a moment, looking past me at the fiery eyes to punctuate his accusation of the Lord. And by the Spirit of the Lord, the heavens opened, and the Father Almighty answered this calling.

The Spirit of God, whose rays of light shone into the world through the spiritual tunnels of love, light, and laughter of many, collapsed into one voice. And as I heard that voice through my heart, beating as a magnetic pulse, I did breathe from the spiritual Word of my existence. And God

said, "It is by violating the trust of many that he works, betraying those who are obedient to him." Then God addressed the Antichrist, "A veil of mystery enshrouds you, Morning Star, yet they follow in darkness. You keep them from love and bring them into wickedness. They turn a deaf ear to me, just as you have. And as they look to you for guidance in sensemaking, the leviathan will continue to eat away at their morals and spiritual homes, and the cycle is continued in your empire of hatred."

The Father, who was in his everlasting home in Heaven, spelled the Word into existence for the serpent called Morning Star. "You cannot gaze into a vision of combat or war with this Author through whom I speak. You, who are of nothingness and dwelling in hellfire, are tortured. And you, whose case is on trial by all the heavens, will answer not only to the Lord Jesus, but me as well. For it is me, your Father in Heaven, the greatest of all light, who is the source of your torment. You do not have love for me in your heart, and you have left my home, only to entice other angels down to the world through the wickedness of your games."

And the Morning Star began to gnash his teeth as his belly retched inside itself. For the light of the Word of God shone down on me and others in the universes. And then the Father, the finality in everlasting goodness, spoke once more. "Author, you have the chance in your lifetime to speak many truths. And when the Morning Star brings you to trial, be aware of his lies and deception. For he will lead you toward mistakes by maneuvering through other people's darkness and hatred, causing them to point at you in accusation. And if you fall for his deceit, you accept him as a source of

your spiritual home. As a public humiliation, your memories will become confused, and you will eagerly plead with others in his case, where you have been tampered with. He will wage war against you by blaming you for the messes he creates. And you, who pleads your innocence in my name, will be cast and persecuted as the villain.

“Do not be his scapegoat, taking blame for his wickedness while he escapes from consequences and establishes new systems of allegiance. He will continue to expand his rule through deceit and temptation. And the men and women who follow his rule as his slaves and support the leviathan are indicative of a greater amount of evil. And he, the Morning Star, will congratulate you by giving you more responsibilities and less wealth. He will bury you in his games, never to be heard from again.

“Author,” said my Heavenly Father, “There are many others who are gazing into your soul. You will accept the influence of some of them. With others, you will use your reflective nature to see through the lens of the Lord Christ’s fiery eyes and speak back to the surrounding world. Right now, you are focused on your own psychological mirror. And if that does not change, you will relive the errors of humanity that the Lord Christ witnessed while being tortured and slain.

“Therefore, you must refocus on the devil. Refocus on the communion of his spirit until you see, smell, taste, hear, and feel the Lord in the background of the Antichrist. And when you sense the Lord in the presence of Daemon, you will belong to me wholly once more – not split in ego or in the natural light of a political organization, but in my good-

ness – bringing the light of awareness to the serpent, who is called the Morning Star.”

Chapter Twenty

The Morning Star faded into my storyline at that point where the Heavenly Father agreed in totality with the Lord through me. And the Heavenly Father said, “Author, the cursed living testimony that resulted from Jesus being slain at Golgotha is the ending of humanity. However, in this result, Jesus bridged the world to the heavens through eternity with his body. For it is the spiritual inclination of your character, your passion for following his light and my Word in your heart, that will allow you to meet him in the garden of Paradise. And in that garden of endings and beginnings, the heavenly kingdom will be built. His throne room will be dedicated to his legacy in this city of the New Jerusalem. And in your testimony as a follower of Jesus as Savior and Messiah, you will bring all of his miracles to the knowledge of others. For it is within his church that he shepherds his people.

“Author, use your intuitive spiritual sight, and look at me through the heart and in the heavens. Look at your awareness of the history you have shared. And through that understanding, where you continually saw the mirror of your spiritual self, you have learned how the Lord came to you in your heart and spoke to you through Heaven. Revelations were given by those fiery eyes that you depict, in that he spoke of his co-creation story with you, where you find the evil in others. And you began to cast the darkness out of others by envisioning the Lord through their own hearts.

“Author, that mirror has been examined for so long in your lifetime, and the time to step away from that mirror is here. You have prepared yourself enough in spiritual combat to keep worshiping the Lord Christ while shunning the temptations of the Antichrist. The mirror will shatter now, and you will begin your grace through the Lord Christ’s guidance and walk in the chaos of the world.

“Spiritually, you will begin to be aware of the devils hopping through the darkened hearts of the people in your surroundings. For the strengthening of their characters will be part of the miracles that Christ will use to promote my love. The flaws in their personalities and their weaknesses of sin will be neutralized and vanquished by the Holy Ghost. And in the warmth of that love, where all men and women feel transformed by their awareness of their souls being reconnected with their physical bodies, they will witness my spiritual light.”

The Heavenly Father, whose brilliance shone in from the opposite end of my tunnel and poured out into the fount of the angels, accepted a result for my story and living book. “Along with my begotten son, Jesus, I will exact my judgment on the Morning Star. In that rule-making system on Earth, where the application of chains of logical reasoning reveals the consequences of giving in to temptation, we will follow the pain backward to the source and capture Satan once more and muzzle him.

“For in the end times, you will become aware of this judgment when peace prevails between people once more, and chaos dissipates. Do you understand how he brought war to each person who was bound by those logical shackles

by causing them to hurt each other? The darkness of each person is rooted in embarrassment of their ignorance, which fuels their envy and pridefulness.

“Author, the serpent fell from Heaven into the made universes. And in those troubled waters, I watched it dissolve into the form of beasts, birds, and people. And in the stars, did he awaken to his natural light, his death. All things that ended in his hellfire were of a time when the universes ripped, tore, and repaired themselves. Yet he continued to fight himself by looking to other birds, beasts, and people to manipulate for his vengeance. And the serpent continued to grow and devolve toward its final state: a red dragon.

“When the dragon looks into your soul and finds the Lord Christ’s gaze, he sees all those people he turned against others through torture. And when the Antichrist sets those people free to continue warring with the Lord Christ’s people, the Lord will turn away from the death and remain cloaked in brilliance. For the natural light of the Morning Star is far weaker than the spiritual brilliance of the Lord. And the illumination of all who are heavenly and angelic spurs so much love and prayer for those lost souls that the devil will turn away as well.

“And in a battle between the evil and the good, humans affect one another through subtle means – either by jumping and leaping into a darkened heart through curses as a devil, or by praying for the damned souls by calling for the Lord’s infinite grace.

“When one comes to judgment on the scales of a trial that impacts humanity, the pressure of social ranking and the hope of societal good are both born by that soul. And it is

on you, Author, for the good of the church and your friends in the society, to deliver this story in a clear and balanced way. It is important to show how the opposition of both evil and good counteract one another and move together in one's body, mind, and soul, harmonizing the overlapping ripples of each moment.

"You must include the different outlooks of time – negative, neutral, and positive. And you must candidly acknowledge that evil, the scales of justice, and the holy good are felt in the heart. The cyclical timing of events creates patterns that the mind understands as real. And the linear time that is felt as a natural occurrence, from the past to the present and into the future, is of one's heart.

"The dragon at the end of time is readying its overwhelming army legions of damnation to bring about the complete downfall of societies across the earth. But as the devil concentrates on finding people's weakness of character, the Lord brings the strength of his heavenly angels to free his people before unleashing his wrath.

"Author, the scale of justice in this trial does not show how you alone measure up. It shows the weight of the world – the measure of humanity. Your living book explains how anyone on this earth can be influenced by the consciousness, and therefore, the heart, to create a strong mindset of servitude of the Lord.

"Author, when all who are willing are serving the Lord, his wrath will overflow. Those who do not follow the Lord's spirit will be lost to the guise of evil, and only upon the conviction of the Morning Star himself will they be rescued, when they bend the knee to the Lord at his sentencing.

“You will find love in other people. You will let other people into your life and allow them to influence your judgment. In time, those who have been rescued will present better and more refined ideas about what it takes to save other souls from evil. Eventually, they will develop a governance system that brings equity and justice to the Lord’s people on Earth.

“Your ideas will help create momentum for this discussion. And by describing your own trial, in which the evil inside you was revealed, and you were challenged to be changed by God in conversations with the Morning Star, you are helping others understand what they face and securing your place among the angels.

“The devils will dive through darkness into brilliant light only when cursing you. And in their souls, they wonder why Jesus bridged the heavens with the earth through his spiritual and physical body. However, it is no secret: the miracle of Jesus Christ’s life and afterlife is the end of the torture and nightmares. And when the darkness dies, the evil can no longer hide from the spiritual light of the world.

“All light of the Lord then is where the judgment ends. The place you will find yourself is in the heavenly kingdom of the Lord, at his angelic fountain. And society’s governance will collapse into oneness with the church. The judgment then will bring peace into the world through equity and justice. And people can pattern their own lives after stories they read that provide a foundation for moral thinking and good behavior.

“The new world is not a doomsday prophecy, but an everlasting covenant. And I will offer my grace to those who

pattern their life story after those who have shown their love for me, whose agreements with me have been written in the scriptures. And my grace will bring them conscious awareness of my Word. By feeling intuition in the heart and soul after searching and reflecting on the surroundings, each person will live out my promises.

“Author, your story is important, as it showcases how the dragon can view a person’s vision through spiritual means, and how they might react, by reflection, and by facilitating the production of societal structure in opposition to his political orders and his warmongering.

“You will look up and down, right and left, and inward and outward throughout your story. The devil will ignite war through oppositional craft, and he will spread evil through shadow devils and anti-personalities. The Antichrist will maneuver throughout the world. Thus is the cause of all humanity to undergo trial, judgment, and sentencing.

“Since justice is blind, your position in this trial is to call on the Morning Star to understand how he has affected your behaviors and emotions in your lifetime. When you turned other people toward evil, you cannot say that the Morning Star controlled you, for you are aware of the truth. Through this trial, you will learn the story he used as a pattern for maneuvering devils through your surroundings and manipulating you. But, through this trial, he will admit that he saw Jesus through your soul, watching you with fiery eyes.”

The Heavenly Father Almighty continued, “You have been chosen from your legacy to share this account, as you are able to save people on my account. And all the monetary wealth gained to bring a heavenly purpose back to the earth

and build the heavenly kingdom will be used as restitution through the sentencing of the Lord's grace and mercy.

"Author, you will be involved in the rendering of justice, which will be revealed only when the opposition ceases, and the political governance grows closer to one where good is prized over evil. The justice that results from this momentum toward building a heavenly kingdom will be shared through the church members. This unity of purpose will be felt as joy, rippling across the world.

"The light in the hearts of the people in this world will be uncovered through their own trials. And ultimately, the Lord Jesus has already prepared for the outcome. The justice is in our faith in him to show mercy on those who serve me in Heaven. And by seeking justice in their own trials, to be rendered in their death and afterlife, they will begin to live out on Earth the victory that Jesus has already achieved.

"That victory includes the numerous times the Morning Star was felt in physical reality by Jesus Christ throughout his testimony. And the miracle wherein my living, begotten Son created that final verdict. That my vision is to save humanity. And that my covenants with humanity are reminders to continue their faithfulness and serve out the end time prophecy without fear or anxiety.

"Serving the Lord Christ will help people focus on the positive, which will carry their soul through trial. And that positive is walking with Jesus to his throne room once more, back through our senses, into the intuitive heart, and back into that tunnel of light, love, and laughter that connects us to the heavens. Author, focus not on the war of darkness but on the light that Jesus offers."

God, our Heavenly Father, then said, "A successful society will be one in which the members live with compassion. People do not seem to understand that they share and experience the world's temptations and suffering together. But together, they can live in the presence of the Lord, where each moment he shines on that society as a beacon of light."

The many heavenly angels then looked down through the tunnel and into my heart. And that spiritual light overpowered the natural light of the world around me. All I needed was to write about my own awakening to those events unfolding in my surroundings.

The blessed moments in my lifetime, all the curses, and the trial that Jesus put the Morning Star through were the sum total of my spiritual experiences. And each of those patterns and freedoms became more spiritual light to reflect on through the fiery eyes of my Lord and Savior. Now, it is through the retelling of Jesus's testimony that I relive my own life patterns to understand his mission of God the Father Almighty.

Chapter Twenty-One

During the judgment of my character, the Antichrist spoke out about many points of leadership and conquest. Daemon exclaimed, "Author, you must realize that the primary focus of all political motivation now is the end of a belief system! And intertwined with all the political action is backstabbing, which can bring about war. That is, when there is hunger for power, there are curses made and plots twisted in the mind, which can alter the hearts of others.

"Negativity is grounded by the heart, and those who focus on the negativity put spin on the Word, using it to stir up anger and resentment. For the grounding negative charge of the world consumes the sun's positive charge. Together, the system balances itself out, releasing what we call a biosphere for the imagination.

"The negative and positive magnetic pulses both cancel out in the sensemaking of our world. And in the mind, we see, hear, taste, feel, and smell what we expect. We are so accustomed to this experience of the world that surrounds us that we justify it as our own making. But when it comes to power, where the leadership has mechanisms to control and investigate people's actions, our efforts to redirect the political focus are met with militaristic force.

"Author," said the Antichrist, "you are one who understands that a person's conscious mind is only aware enough to defend themselves, and maybe their family. You should also understand how I, as the embodiment of fear and hatred of the world, give guidance to others on how they can ma-

nipulate their political position through magnetism and extreme self-reverence. And that reverence then materializes in the world through other people's subconscious beliefs."

The Antichrist, Daemon, continued, "The end justifies the means. And in war, we see how warmongering is an attribute of political power. For it is no minor tactic to use the threat of war to gain advantage over a less powerful opponent. Yet it requires minimal power to incriminate the opposition and justify to oneself and others why force is needed against those who are cursed by such oppositional leadership.

"Warmongering involves leading people to believe in this political end. And in anti-religious and materialistic civilizations, where the population feels justified in waging war, I and my father, the serpent, reign supreme. And as king of the shadow policies of every elite ruling class, I will enforce my thoughts on humanity. I will render my judgment on those who support the warmongering political orders and bring about this end. I will overthrow the world and force slavery upon all, even those who are good and holy, until they succumb to my vision of Hell on Earth.

"Author, the preparation for this dark era in humanity was my resolve after the fall from Paradise. And the end vision for my worldly self is to usher in the moment of conquest through my leadership. You have fallen to such a leadership role as well, not only by listening to my words as they hypnotized your weak mind through magnetic pulses, but also by your actions, building resistance against the Lord's church. In the course of all human history, the devolution of the spirit to my terms, moving from positive to negative po-

larities, has created educational and social environments in which people stay weak.”

Daemon continued, “The passions of people are still savage. For generations, they have been bred under leaders who wage war against a neutral heart. Where there has been political maneuvering to contest God’s opposition to these wars, I have sent the ruling elites further away from His love and mercy, with political mayhem or militaristic bloodshed, my end goal.

“The focus of my era of darkness in humanity has been to misinform and mislead the good and holy people first. Because once the head of that angelic fountain collapses, the spiritual light of the Christ will fade into my darkness for other people.

“With the focus of political leaders on misinforming and misleading their society on familial issues, school systems, and social norms, they will spread their lies as far and wide as possible. And when their opposition fights back, the sum total of the warfare is negative. Blood spills to the ground, and mothers and fathers cry in unison for their children to return to them from their new heavenly home.

“Author, lies and spin make people believe in their inherently correct position. Often, I offer the ruling elite of generations a simple and straightforward directive to add to their maddening methods. I ask the rulers or kings to defect from their trust in God and promote my end objective as a noble political vision. And as they pretend that my vision is shared by the forces of good and noble people, the subconscious of the forces unify in a war cry. And the modern civilization

will act out of misinformation and savagery, ignoring its own internal wellbeing and enslaving its own population.

“When a civilization goes to war, with armaments and soldiers, the ruling elite will forget about the exploitation occurring on the battlefield within their own borders. This contradiction of war serves me well, as master of that society. You see, Author, my political venture is one where bloodshed is justified by both external and internal opposition. Resources are wasted on both sides of the confrontation while society tolerates and ignores any and all casualties.

“Author, I came here from Hell to provide you with this lesson. Now take heed, for the will of society in the nations on Earth, including your own, has become so negatively charged that war is guaranteed to result.

“When society acts like they value human life but ignore it to chase power and profits, they no longer have an ethical belief system supporting their actions. But they will lose their stance as noble because of their own greed and lust. And I will ensure that those kings and rulers mobilize a tremendous amount of resources for our militaristic conquests while tolerating the suffering in their communities. And in the darkness that produces such savagery within, more hearts will be cursed and captured.

“Author, the real lesson then is to understand how my influence can affect such ruling elite. Their charismatic magnetism is not endowed by their genetics. It is the result of my misinformation campaigns, drilled into them over and over again, slightly manipulating the circumstances using both my awareness and their militaristic ambition to lead.

“Neither soft nor hard power then matter as much in the minds of those who crave raw power. And so I was able to manipulate these elite decision makers into engulfing their own nations in hellfire, and through my misinformation, they will play right into my doomsday prophecy. And following their lust and greed will bring a windfall only for those who welcome more power on their heads. They wear my crown of lies and deceit as a signal of the causes we craft together and claim as noble. They are unaware that I will lead them to darkness once I have used them for their skill sets for my own judgment of war.

“Author, these lessons of power are intended to mislead the masses and train them not only into ignorance, but also into obedience, superstition, and worship of false idols as they excuse their own savagery. And in these false gods, they will abandon their own humanness, poor and broken in spirit.

“These lessons are also meant to improve their skills in statecraft or performative diplomacy for political maneuvering. When there is a negatively charged end objective, I will teach people how to use soft power so that they may be seen as a trustworthy source of information through which networks can be established (+,+).

“And through the exercise of soft power, my leadership will be displayed by controlling the information through positioning and decision-making. This will involve the use of information as propaganda, which society ignores but also feeds into as a display of nationalistic willpower to overwhelm any opposition, as well as a cure for opposition (+,-).

“My lessons then turn ideas into militaristic power. The actualization of a leader’s position lies within their willingness to spend on resources and to reward people for engaging in self-destructive behaviors (-, -).

“Finally, the cycle of power is completed when those seeking to gain control of the resources through their increased economic power coerce other populations into succumbing to the war efforts (-, +).

“Author, the ruling elite focus on bringing about my end objective by getting others to follow into the trap of my temptations. Through greed and lust, the primary levers of conquest, many souls will be taken into the darkness. And when the people of a nation believe in my misleading stories of greed and lust, they will call out and curse everyone in opposition. Their calls for war will bring ruin to their homes and families within, and the civilization of the opposition will be in tatters.

“Do you understand how war is a pendulum swinging back and forth between opposing forces? The civilizations that preach peace are often coercive, as they speak situationally of their humanity while making demands, controlling the media, committing war crimes, and engaging in economic strategies that put excessive pressure on any opposition.

“Diplomacy and war are on the same continuum of power. Where the misinformed society builds its national sentiment through unethical decision-making, their false gods will rule them as masters in place for me. And in this new language of false inspiration, the ageless battlefield I have prepared will amount to the death and destruction of humanity.”

The Antichrist then looked into my eyes and searched for my understanding of how power influences the surrounding people. He said, "In time, you will awaken to real evil. And in time, you will relive this negatively charged power through my right fist. For I rule with authority, and the genius of my actions is to take over the minds, and therefore the hearts, of the people in each society before moving on to the society at large. The emotions of each person in a society will then be charged with hatred and lust. And the emotions resulting from self-hatred show their ignorance about their own morality. This negativity then turns into mass hysteria about unforeseen events that are contradictory to my end objective. Labelling others as the 'enemy' fuels a desire to follow false gods and position this ideology as something to fight for. The resources then dwindle for the majority within the society, who have become slaves to their newest masters."

The Antichrist then said to himself, "We in Hell are to come to the surface of this chaotic world made over by the ruling elite. Those kings whose crowns only spur their hate for others will be there to welcome me. And as I play on the sides of both good and evil through narratives of power, the pendulum will slowly move from present to past. And the devolution of the system will rest on one false god, my serpent father, turned dragon. For the dragon grows from the intolerance of humanity.

"In time, the dragon will reveal his wisdom of conquest. And you will be on trial for aiding the conquest to occur. In that last judgment, your mind will falter, and you will descend to my lunacy. Author, my thoughts are weakened by the spiritual light of the Lord Christ. And those who plead

ignorance to both my intervention and the Lord's mercy will have nothing left to offer to either of us. Ultimately, your soul will hold nothing but madness, left to worship only what you are told by other people.

"Lunacy is the darkness you will embrace as you ignore your sentencing. You will lose your relationships with those in your surroundings. You will become withdrawn to the darkness where your curses are. You will feel everything damned in my heart as emotions. And you will belong to my hellfire.

"This is the end I envision for you, Author. And all the people in your surroundings will react to this end by treating you as inferior to them in power. But you will resist these assessments and argue against them. Thus I shall sentence you, and you will wage war in the hell that I chose for you.

"That is, unless you take up my sword and shield to fight for my purpose alongside my fallen armies. You can join my fight against the good and noble. This torture will then be resolved through my expedient rewards of resources.

"Author, it is your choice whether you want to understand my games of conquest in life. You chose to step into the chaos of life to fight for the Lord Christ. And your living testimony is the only thing that can survive throughout time. For many people will be on trial while you awaken to my devices of lust and greed. And through your awareness, and their awakening, my mind-control tactics will be questioned in their character when they realize they are on trial.

"You are a sacrificial ram, Author. And in the trial, when others are warmongering, you will understand the great gift the Lord and I share."

Chapter Twenty-Two

The spirits of two fallen angels, the twins called Lucifer and Azrael, came to me. And in support of what the Antichrist had previously conveyed, they announced, "Author, you will witness our fall from grace mirrored in others. And as you thwart your own patterns, you will try to understand how to help those who suffer in our torment. Some will spread lies and deceit about your vision for a better world, and heads will turn to stare at you. And your testimony of a heavenly kingdom on Earth will fall on their deaf ears. For the attempted education of the masses has already failed."

Both angels fell from the garden into one body as the Devil. However, Azrael was the original evil angel who fell to his own destruction and tore his heart open, showing how darkness was a fuel that multiplied Lucifer's power. And the Antichrist was the equivalent of the Morning Star's offspring. Therefore, the fall into nothingness turned from the darkness of the heart to fear that spread rampant in humanity. The widespread human reaction was the experience of nervousness and the hypnotic effects of death's darkened heart.

Azrael proclaimed that the people of the world would understand their insecurities as strengths. He announced, "In civilization, we as all evil incarnate in the Morning Star, have mistreated and miseducated the children of God. And as the leaders engage in their warmongering, it is felt as hatred for all things good and holy; therefore, the children react to those leaders who were carrying out our orders. In that

end vision, after the cyclical escalation of events, God's children are turned against the Lord's church.

"Author, so far you have claimed that a genuine loyalty to the Lord implies spiritual resilience to evil. Yet I wonder, is that the case in the heart? This discussion may be different for each person, given their unique feelings and experiences in their trials in life. However, the Lord protects his children through an education of intuitive prayer, and each person can attest that they not only internalize their battles with evil and good but also resist our temptations.

"In the upper feminine chamber of the heart, the Morning Star, and I, as the spirit of death, begin our war. And, through death and defeat, we have placed in civilizations worldwide governing institutions that restrict the freedom to question authority.

"In the lower feminine chamber of the heart, civilization has fallen for an intellectual idealism that shuns true spirituality and following the Holy Ghost. Individuality therefore is discouraged, and peer pressure rewards obedience to me. And, as an end vision, as peer pressure increases, the spiritual people in each society eventually pose no challenge to political authority or evil intent.

"Author, that is why those in society who are spiritually inclined do not speak up about their own life lessons. Their education may be fine to internalize a spiritual battle, but those with the Holy Ghost may realize that their lives depend on being obedient. The upper masculine chamber of the heart is where evil is experienced, and outcomes are either non-threatening adversity or submission to our evil intent.

“The game pieces are played by Lucifer. And according to his strategy, in the lower masculine chamber of the heart is where one becomes aware of evil in the surroundings. And in the education of who has power and intent to harm, an evolving storyline emerges for the delusional or lunatic. As for the spiritually inclined, those who fight by the mercy of God are disgraced as delusional by a corrupt governing system.”

Azrael laughed at how the Morning Star was highly successful in manipulating people, turning them in spirit toward his war. “The massive power that a governing system has to operate with only requires the ruling elite to disseminate propaganda and disinformation through the educational system, bureaucracy, and media. Widespread obedience then follows.

“Author, when have you had the resilience and bravery to discuss state administration, public governance, and political loyalty as they relate to the church’s viewpoint of defending the good and holy from evil?”

Azrael stopped for a moment, looking inquisitively at the fiery eyes of the Lord in my background. The fallen angel then continued, saying, “At the heart of this darkness, where the evil one tries to corrupt all civilizations in the world, there is a point where honesty and trust are forfeited. And the embattled church must announce its stance on how to protect its people from evil and educate them on the trials they will face.”

Azrael grinned at me. “There is lust in your heart. And that offsets the nobleness of your passion for keeping the church’s views as your own. Author, you prize all women

who adore you. And you get caught in a trap where the women you love would have you show passion for them rather than for the church. This conflict is between your God and you. But understand that, to collapse the darkness in your heart, where all evil resides and hops from and toward, you must realize that you do not fight evil in action.

“Author, you fight alone each day. If you feel in your heart there is something amiss or a tortured soul offering repentance to God, you applaud. But the grander understanding of how Lucifer and I corrupt the world’s civilizations is often ignored in favor of continuous prayer and daily living.

“That’s why when we tempt you with lust, you falter and fail to understand how the strings are being pulled in your heart. And this temptation of lust is actually just a distraction to keep you blind to what is occurring in the politics and governance of the world around you. And thus, you ignore what’s happening, without fighting for an administration that cares for its people in a way you find sensible. You often want to fight those in your society, who argue amongst themselves, without questioning the educational system. And after listening to the arguments of many who distribute disinformation, you conclude that they are wrong, though you are still enraged. Therefore, you accept the violence in a corrupt government that controls its media access, policing powers, and education of citizens.”

Azrael shook violently. “As you follow your lustful desires, you’re accepting my victory as if you were powerless to change anything in your lifetime. And as an educated and spiritual individual in your community, you internalize this struggle and feel distraught. But you do not understand

my evil or the hypnotic state of power of those who wear a crown.

“Your passion has been the power you sought in serving the Lord through your lineage. And your experiences with how that transpired have been the basis of your story. However, now you understand how the serpent’s crown of power is constantly at war with your outlook. And soon, you will begin to understand how this power evokes the worst in people, as humanity brings plagues down upon itself. And where they can overcome their evil motivations and invoke the good and holy, God will show them the power of His mercy.

“Listen carefully, Author. If you want to slow or stop the absorption of darkness in the hearts of humanity, you must understand love first. And educating the population about love will involve something much different than describing the ruling elite of a political party.

“For one thing, you will have to explain that the church must not simply acquiesce to the ways of the world and tell its members to take no position on the matter. You do not have to belong to a particular church to stand up for them. But you can advise people, based on your own wisdom and experience, on how the secular state can grow closer to the church through the inspired Word.

“The world might hold you out as a lunatic, as you will be alone in your surroundings, forecasting a war and trial of humanity. And this position does not make the inspired word you share seem trustworthy. However, if you follow your passions in love, not lust, your words will ring true in the readers’ consciousness.

“Disinformation is constantly spread with evil intention, assaulting people’s thoughts through media, arguments, and gossip. You must learn to logically decipher the disinformation in these spaces, then you can share this new Word of truth with others. When you do this, the disinformation of the ruling elite cannot excuse, reinterpret, or spin the truth, for it will be centered from your heart.

“And in recognizing this truth, you will see the temptations of lust and greed for what they are. The trial imposed upon you by the Morning Star will become more difficult because he will lose control over your reactions to his corrupt human pawns and fallen angels.

“Author, the final element of this trial will be to secure a legacy in which the church and state grow close enough together that a movement begins. As you work toward this, you will come to understand that your place in your lineage offers you something even grander than the ability to fight alone and ignore the evil in your life. You possess the credibility to further the Lord’s covenant with his people for their governance through his church. But protecting the world from evil will require more than self-reflection. It will require the passion to lead the misinformed and educate them about scrutinizing and rejecting evil details and developing their sense-making skills.

Azrael looked back upon the fiery eyes of the Lord once again and sighed. “This pendulum that goes back and forth between governance systems works in tandem with several others that swing from end to end along each of the axes of the personality. And when the prevailing governing systems begin to coordinate and overlap with the belief system of the

Lord, the church will become the dominant force in politics again. The pendulum then will become neutralized as the politicians' hearts begin to obey what the Lord wants. And when they all listen to one Lord, the spirit of goodness will overpower the evil in the civilizations, and the wars will end.

"Author, your trial for humanity began when you thought to bring the Morning Star to judgment. He and all the fallen angels will continue to seek out your weaknesses and attack you through them to control the information that you feel in your body, both physically and emotionally. We will control everything we can through your weaknesses to bring our chaos to your knowledge. And we will let you fight your position as a 'sacrificial ram,' in your own words.

"This is where we will begin to darken your heart and cloud your vision of a kingdom of Heaven on Earth.

"Author, I want you to know that, although you have a great light in your heart, you must overcome your lust of women. This lust is based on your false beliefs about what they think about you and your own thoughts about your capabilities to please them. These horrific ideas tend to manifest in your surroundings because you search for appeasing women. And everyone in the surroundings sees your beliefs about your partners.

"If you saw what the Lord sees, as I have done just now, you would move quickly to hide everything from those people in your surroundings. For you have defeated little in terms of sinfulness. In fact, even facing our temptations scared you enough that you resorted to non-committal action. And that weakness of yours, where you accept disinformation about yourself, has made you willing and kept

you wanting to play in a partner's game of life. On the one hand, you have outgrown society's pressure to take action and move where evil wants. But instead, you move very seldom in the pursuit of having a family for yourself with a woman you love."

Azrael's eyes narrowed as he focused on me. "I will tell you this. From what I saw in the vision through the Lord's fiery eyes, is that, for you to understand love, you must work for a new society or civilization which allows love to be found. That message is in what you perceive as the needed vision for the church. But, as they clash and conflict with the political authority, you have seen that the people in your societies and their governing systems are very complex. Therefore, when chaos is removed, along with the Morning Star, and power is given back to the Lord's people, you will need to help educate a whole population on what occurred and what has to happen going forward, staying present and neutral in the heart.

"Author, the eyes inside my body, the ones of all the fallen in the heart of the serpent who is the Morning Star, will awaken to the truest source of spiritual light. And in that heart, where all are neutralized by the swing of the pendulum of power and instability, the angels will recognize their lost faith. And as the eyes open, awakening in the Morning Star, those who fell for the disinformation and darkened their hearts will begin to find their way back to truth and love once more.

"Author, you have heard that the Lord is love, and this is indeed accurate. And if you search inside yourself long enough to overcome the devil and find love to sustain your

family, in the process, you may grow too old to understand the pressure you put on yourself. Instead, search for how to realize the church's vision for bringing the political state and church together through love. And find a partner who is looking for love herself.

"Together, when you match forces of spiritual identity, you will realize that the whole time you wanted a family of your own, you believed you were non-committal due to fears instilled in you by us evil ones. You will no longer believe the lies and deceit of our war, those intended to make you ignore your lust. Instead, you will learn how a neutral heart can and will belong to your partner and family. And the right path will become obvious to a brave heart that is of the lineage of Judah's tribe."

The angel Azrael then took one last look within his darkened heart. He saw a small light. He said, "Looking into this spiritual light in my heart, I can see that you were reconnected through the Morning Star's heart to the heavens. And through this light of Judah's tribe, the world will face the terrible realization that all the evil in their anti-personalities was of lust, greed, lies, and deceit, and that they fell away from the Lord together as a civilization. That means that the spinning chambers of the heart, for which the natural direction was clockwise, began to spin in the opposite direction. And in that counter-clockwise fashion, the political state fell away further from the Lord's church.

"Author, I will now share the Lord's wisdom as I see it through you. For in the Morning Star, he possesses all the knowledge of the fallen angels. And in that wisdom, you will discern the spiritual light you call the Word of God. And you

will learn how multiple belief systems can come together and coordinate into one unifying belief system that stays neutral in both heart and mind.

“Therefore, Author, as you remain aware of the light of your partner in life, she will guide you through such treasures as raising children and grandchildren. And the covenant of the Lord will be heard by them and passed down to the generations that follow. They will hear your testimony about how choosing good over evil in the heart allowed your legacy to be born.”

Chapter Twenty-Three

I looked around and saw many eyes, transfixed on the light inside my soul. The Morning Star had taken me into his heart when he learned that I was to be part of his trial, judgment, and sentencing. And, capturing me within his gaze, the hypnotic stare of the dragon overwhelmed my soul so much that I lost my own awareness of the Lord Christ. I entered the hellfire of chaos, where the reflection of the Lord's mirrorlike refuge was shattered.

I had fallen into that darkened heart of the devil when he called out to me as a siren would. And in that song of emotional upheaval, I began to experience the past evil I had conducted out in the world, and I lost myself as I focused on the Antichrist.

"Author," Azrael said with a crude look of indulgence, "we have seen the light that you offer to the Lord's people. That light signals the Word of the Lord. Therefore, we listened to the pulses of magnetic sound waves sent out from your beating heart. The waves that correspond to your heartbeat are of a lighter, heavenly feel. We were in so much pain listening to it ourselves, only because it made us focus on something other than fighting within the world and bringing about war to accomplish an end vision.

"All those who form our collective heart, the fallen angels and the humans who were damned, listen only to Lucifer. And now, they feel the light of the Lord. This attack on our collective mindset of superiority is sending evil into a frenzy."

The eyes of the fallen angels basked in the light of the Lord's glory. And, as the Lord became aware of the cavernous pit of hellfire that was the darkness of the Morning Star's heart, he called out to Lucifer.

Lucifer, the owner of the collective mind and the heart of the Devil, stepped away from his own throne. Lucifer was a beautiful fallen angel. And his twin, Azrael, was death in spirit for the Devil.

Referring to the Lord's light in the midst of his fallen army, Lucifer asked, "What is this light for? We use past memories to bridge into humanity's hearts and thereby control the emotions of their egos. And we have always taken their strength and their pride and used it against them as weaknesses. In the shackles of our leviathan, each man and woman who listened to our lies would be deceived into believing that war and conquest was good for their world."

The light that was taming the dark army into a peaceful state of relaxation then affected the evil heart of Satan. And the heartbeat that had been dead in Hell then became slightly active.

The Spirit of the Lord Christ said through his majestic and glorious resolve, "This Author, who you put on trial, through which you would challenge my intellect, will now witness my grace."

The three axes appeared, projected by the Lord. And the heartbeat of the Morning Star, which was extremely faint, was then projected as well, and it was made to move around the three axes. In the death and the darkness of the heart, all of the shadow devils and fallen angels had experienced their own manifestation of sinfulness.

The spirit of Azrael, the deathly ghost of war, was on trial as well. The light captured his spirit first, as time and space began to merge the body of the Antichrist with the earth, so that everything that had devolved into the dragon in the end of days now had a bit of light to evoke the positive. And the negative aspect of the cube of space centered on a very small point of light.”

And the Lord said to Lucifer, “When you recognize that you are no longer immortal, you will feel a weakness turned to strength in my love.”

Lucifer raged at the thought. “Love?! When has the devil ever felt such removal of lust and greed from its body? The Morning Star only felt a change in his end vision through Christ’s spirit once. And by revisiting this instance, when Jesus was met by all things unholy for three days after his death on the cross, this memory has only been strengthened. Why would humans continue to follow the light of the Lord through our hellfire just to then endure a trial of all incarnate evil in the world? Do they not understand that war is the objective for which a political order should be accepted?”

And Lucifer, as the devil, repositioned that feeling of love that was rushing through his body. He thought that he had corrected the error in his political leviathan, which had been called out as the mark of the beast. He continued to address his warmongering political order, demanding his shadows to torture the minds of those who waged war. And all the members of the military throughout the world began to hear the siren’s call, claiming that war was a necessity to breed into the earth for a purpose of power through resource gathering.

“The time is near when the horseman will come into the world to fight our battle. And in the body of that ram with a thousand eyes, the Prince of Peace will be slaughtered. And humanity will lose all connection to the co-creation and creation story blended between evil and good. For the ignorant will accept anything that is evil. And the lazy will accept anything to protect themselves from being harmed.”

Lucifer continued, “Thus the Antichrist will offer gold and other wealth to satisfy greed and lust. And for those who believe they are entitled to plunder the world, Daemon will give nothing back of the trust accepted as servitude.

“The horsemen of the Antichrist will then belong to the world, and humanity will falter in arrogance, making mischief while establishing their rule. And the courts tasked with ordering the judgments in the world will feel powerless in the rising anarchy, from which fear will meet Daemon’s hypnotic authority. And this enactment of our end vision will reestablish the serpent in physical form in the world as the Man of Time. The serpent, otherwise known as the Morning Star, will realize his position as supreme.”

Lucifer then repositioned himself back on his throne, sitting as he was when he had originally entered his body.

And once again, I felt the magnetic wave of a pulsing heart from within my soul, protesting in response to what I had heard.

And in that light that was supreme intellect came a Word into my soul. And in that present moment of peace, which reclaimed my attention from the gaze of all evil incarnate, came a new revelation. The Lord spoke within my heart, saying, “Author, there will be a moment when it will

seem that the warmongering has taken the world too far to bring it back into my fold. And when the masses are experiencing the devastation of war, their disease of sinfulness will be accounted for in their books and my universal creation story. And each man and woman will find themselves on the scales of my blind justice.”

The Spirit of the Lord Christ continued, “And when I bring redemption for the masses who believed in me, their faith will be rewarded. And as the Morning Star is born into a new life that offers something closer to neutrality of the heart than negativity, he will sing my praises.

“Author, stay inside that heart of the Morning Star. And witness my ability to withstand the attacks of the devils throughout Hell. For it was in my abilities as the Lord of all Heaven that they came to understand my being and purpose. And in the end that I promised for life is an everlasting kingdom, with me at the source. All good things will come from me. And the shadow devils that take form through the dark waves of the universes, those through which anti-personalities are made known in people, will reverse their course and be brought into me.

“Those who experience the shadows of their anti-personalities, when they acknowledge these attacks, they will begin to weigh in on their consciousness according to the scales reflecting their own living story. Because their co-creation story is written as an account of the angels that preside over them, those angels will write their final sentencing. And the light will bring their redemption in the garden of Eden and with all things holy in God the Father.”

The Lord said very clearly, “The Morning Star will be crushed under the weight of judgment by me and the Father in Heaven. The sinfulness will dissipate from all things heavenly in spirit. And the pendulum of life in the universes and the heavens will become still.”

Lucifer looked at the Lord Christ, in whom all things are made good and holy. Lucifer acknowledged that the light had existed in Hell and that, if time was cyclical and humanity began to acknowledge this pattern, the light would grow stronger in his heart, and therefore, his mind.

The Holy Spirit grew stronger with each additional person coming into their trial of judgment, as their consciousness was cleansed.

Lucifer said, “The track before you presents a choice. To follow the Lord Christ’s word in your soul is to willingly walk with him through the valley of the shadow of death. And in that barren, cavernous place where love does not yet exist, beside his footprints, you will understand my intentions. As a negative being, I will honor this request that you fall into the fold of Heaven, even while suffering in hellfire and sulfur.”

He continued, “Author, the love that you have shared through Christ’s spirit has been profound for the shadow devils in Hell. And the collective mindset of my mental worship will reverberate that magnetic pulse. So it is that I can describe how the fall of humanity will be resolved, and the people will ultimately be restored in faith.

“The Morning Star will follow the Antichrist to the earth. For the heart has space as a projection now from its own heartbeat. And in this miracle, the Man of Time, also

known as the Morning Star's human form, will begin to see the repercussions of his own actions. There is a pulse in the heart and a reverberation of awareness that will lead the Morning Star to accept his own defeat, if mankind does not destroy itself first."

Lucifer went on, "This is the siren call, appealing to his incredible negative gravity. And the charismatic Man of Time will be put on trial by being muzzled by Archangel Michael.

"Author, if it is true that the trial of the Morning Star will occur for all the world to witness, over a course of hundreds of years, humanity will shift and acknowledge how savage it has become in its cruelty. And over time, that recognition from the Man of Time of his own sinfulness will move all who were carried in his belly to repent."

Looking to the Lord's light through my soul, Lucifer said, "Though our pursuit was to rise in power throughout the world and to devastate God, we as evil will accept a neutralized position through the leviathan. And this position will recognize the Lord's spirit as holy. The Lord will then be recognized as the decision maker in rule of all the universe, collapsed, and no longer separated."

Chapter Twenty-Four

The Holy Ghost asked why I would agree to traverse through the hellfire, which brought sulfur and insidious flame into my soul. The spirit exclaimed, “Did you know that, by walking with the Lord’s spirit through this torment, you would incur such pain? In their foolishness, humans discovered a powerful political stance from which they could overthrow his decree, but they were then cast into Hell for their sinfulness.

“Author, in the life of Christ, many people were cursing his church. This is a storyline that we still live out to this day. Elite people can gain powerful positions in society and take a stance against any of the church’s teachings to justify their actions. And it is largely the elite who decide who is in charge of resource allocation, and creating the narrative of how that decision is good and wholesome. However, those who rule are often unaware of the roles they play as part of the trial on humanity.

“When the torment of other people is ignored by the ruling elite, they become accepting of a moral slumber. And in that slumber, they allow the torment of more people in the same way they got away with the previous time. And eventually, their patterns cause a shift in what is acceptable for others as well. Their ignorance of the pain that their sins inflict hurts Jesus and his church, then it begins to burn their souls. Their anti-personalities, the shadows in which they begin to curse others and jump and leap through the shadows

of other people's hearts, are likened to a game piece on a board game for their master, the Morning Star.

"Author, that serpent, who becomes like a leviathan of logical chains between the hearts of the slave masters, establishes the rules of the games that govern the politics of civilization. And when they hide from the light, the elite fall further and further from Jesus in their hearts. But Jesus sees their hatred, for he sees the suffering of his church."

The fiery eyes of Jesus Christ then opened wide in my background. The light that emanated from these eyes was brilliant and pure. For when I saw all light from the fiery eyes of the Lord, I stopped in my thoughts and became aware of his power and glory.

And the Lord Christ's spirit said, "To break the chains of logic through which the game is set up to destroy the majority of humanity, this doomsday prophecy must be acknowledged. Through the testimony of my mission, from which I left the earth on that day in Golgotha when I died on the cross, my creation story with the people on Earth will be lived out. And that will mean that more people will be aware and willingly go through the hellfire that these rulers who served the serpent would have taken humanity into. But the fallen angels who ruined their chances to be in Heaven, who could not save themselves in my eyes, will be given a chance to repent in trial.

"Author, I will finish this story by explaining this judgment and sentencing for which I have lived as the light, bringing the mercy of the Heavenly Father. In time, you will be slain as the lamb with horns and a thousand eyes for all who read this story. For it is recognized by my house that a

leader from the tribe of Judah will understand my passion and fulfill this covenant.

“Let the dragon circle around you and tempt you through his lies. And let those lies cause all men and women who hear them to falter in their own fragility. For it is that the lies and temptations of the beast will become apparent in life when the Morning Star comes back to the living world after the Antichrist.

“And those who are alive, who feel the power of the decisions made and justified by that master, they will begin to falter in their own words and deeds. They hurt and humiliate others because they feel stronger when they incorporate more fallen people into their shadows. And they will continue to whip you with their cursed thoughts and words.

“But you, Author, will have my light, shining brightly in your soul. And that crucifix, which represents your passion and the path that will bring all to the final judgment, will be your guiding light. But bearing my light will cause fights and punishment by the serpent’s rulers. But their lies and deceit will be taken from me and resolved as a sentencing for their karmic patterns, which they will live out by themselves until time expires.

“Everlasting life will be shared by those who convert the fallen ones and lead them back into my Heaven. Those who gather and are watchful over the hellions will warn others. And by watching how the Lord’s spirit unfurls into reality, those who are spiritually aware will begin to fight the temptations in preparation for future reckoning with the Lord. And that reckoning with their savior will begin to be lived out by all in spirit and heart through realized prayers.

“The present moment then will begin to bring many signs from the heavenly angels as they announce their presence. And the holy warriors who fight for humanity will begin to teach others how to fight those with darkened hearts and minds.

“The leviathan in society will be questioned, as the words of a charismatic Antichrist are ignored. And those who know the Lord’s heavenly angels will speak to each other and to those they influence with good and holy prayers. They will begin to recognize what is evil and will begin to speak out about it. And the fight in the mind will be advanced, through which the shadow devils will be defeated.

“For it is the heavenly angels, fighting against the war-mongers, who will question how their infighting will allow peace in the world. And the goal of receiving the Lord’s spirit will become the objective instead of the doomsday prophecy of Satan.

“Do you understand how the war will end yet? That the light of the Savior, in which Jesus moved through Hell, will awaken Lucifer and Azrael and cause them to adjust their end vision and focus on Heaven. And in that rippling across the world, which grounds all negative charge, the lord’s presence will be announced by the people of the earth. And by rejoicing in that ever-watchful presence, and anticipating how Satan will maneuver the people like game pieces, the holy and good will begin to have the power of the Holy Ghost in their hearts to announce evil when it transpires.

“The heavenly angelic warrior spirits will be led in what will be a fight for all humanity to live and receive Jesus. The evil will harden their thoughts against all who fight them.

And only later will they discover the shadows to be enforcing a mindset they did not realize was false.

“For those who harbor shadow devils who lie, tempt, and sin, the marks on their foreheads will be read by the heavenly angels. And those marks of the beast will be inquired over by the heavenly warriors. The negative will be displaced through their admissions that they only cared to war with the good and holy, to gain political advantage.

“And that admission of their own sinfulness will shake the earth for those who are evil, as the Heavenly Father and I will decide if they receive the same blind judgment as everyone else. And in the Morning Star’s heart, where the devil originally fell into this universe, the soul will be weighed against gold and feathers.

“Author, the fight that begins in the heart and is discussed within society shows an awareness. However, those who are noble and good and who will fight the evil devils will be accused and punished for their actions. And the evil doers, who fight the holy and good warriors, will project their shadows onto them. The hateful will try to curse the heavenly warriors in the heart and spit rejection against all things that would lead to receiving Jesus Christ’s light.

“The angels in Heaven will begin to gather more strength so that it will not only be the noble warriors on Earth who will recognize and fight the evil curses and words projected at them, but the angels will also see the devils that they face in spiritual vision.

“And the Morning Star will become recognizable to the good fighting the evil through those devils, as they continue to fight through their evil master. And the gaze of the ser-

pent and dragon might appear to the heavenly hosts of Jesus Christ. Therefore, you, Author, have seen the match of the two masters become realized in your own testimony. For your words and actions will be part of the recorded story of Jesus Christ to be received once more in the kingdom of Heaven on Earth.

“This new Jerusalem will be built with each church member receiving the Lord’s spirit in their hearts. The little flame of the Holy Ghost is felt in the heart. And that spirit of God, which increases the spiritual abilities of each person, will be acknowledged and prayed for.

“The tongues of the flame, through which all the people of the world will talk to each other, will be realized. And the Holy Ghost will be the soul receiving Jesus Christ. Those who were watchers, who prayed for the society to realize the evil ways of the leviathan, will begin to ask the Heavenly Father to offer such holy flame into the hearts and lives of others.

“The recognition of this heartfelt communion can be discussed as a calling or passion to follow the Lord Christ’s spirit. And as the Lord gains his foothold in the hellfire, where the Morning Star hid in his power, this evil will begin to backtrack toward the scales of heavenly justice.

“Author, the preceding storyline of the Morning Star and its influence on humanity will be his admission of how he offered his power as a crown to people. And with that crown, the evil masters controlled their respective peoples through chains of their own logic. The rules they used to enforce patterns of behaviors allowed those governing bodies to fall away from the Lord and follow their false gods.

“In the heart, you will understand how these games of political order have been actualized in life, and how the chaos of life is maddening for all who fight to usher in an order that is of higher ideals. Society will fight back against all who see the brilliance of their Lord. And speaking him into the world will cause laughter from those who have no respect for the beliefs of others.”

The Lord’s spirit continued to speak within my heart, “Author, these ideas concerning the Morning Star will reveal darkness in anyone’s lifetime. But it will fade into the spiritual light of Paradise soon. As more people gift the little flame of the Holy Spirit through prayer with the Father, their co-creation stories will become unified in my creation story. Those patterns in which people who are in the dark find themselves will be internalized. And the light will be reflected in their actions when that flame of the heart is realized. And in each book, the records will begin to shift toward one narrative again.

“The presence of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ will be felt and understood by all. They will understand that it is not them, but God, working through their souls.

“Author, the Lord is of a spiritual light before all time. His light is from the Father. And he was sent to catch and redeem all who repent and seek his mercy. The life and testimony of Jesus Christ is holy in word. His flesh was promised to be the Messiah, twice over. And the patterns of the Christ that we live out in our own world will be extended beyond sending him to death through the crucifixion. The church will begin to prepare those who live through these times of hellfire on Earth, in which the political powers promise the

realization of a doomsday prophecy. And the heavenly angels will strengthen those who are aware, and teach them to take note and fight the devils through merciful laughter.

“The time to arrange your life and prepare to meet God in Paradise is near. And in the calm before the chaos that Jesus presents to us with his flame of the Holy Spirit, you will understand his walk through Hell.”

Section Four

The Morning Star within the Mind and Heart (-,+)

Chapter Twenty-Five

When the Morning Star Tempts the Mind (-,-)

“Author, there are a great many places in the world where I can show you how I manifested in the lives of the population. Each region, state, and local community still has evidence of the effects of my presence. Not one person was untouched by the influence of my mindset going around them, through them, or past them. And each person prioritized their own greedy and lustful desires and pursuits.

“Each time I moved people around on the gameboard of life, I caused a conflict. These conflicts were contrary to what the heavens wanted for that person. In your case, there were instances of great instability between what Heaven wanted and what I maneuvered into your thoughts. Therefore, there was instability in your personality and some dramatic shifting between extreme behaviors. One left you feeling insane after the emotional backlash, and the other left you a slave to public opinion. And when I intervened, both of these states were intensified by your greed and lust. For it was, as you have acknowledged, that your mind was a prison, and your body was doomed to belonging to public sentiment.”

Lucifer, an angelic prince of darkness, took me into his fold. He and Azrael both imagined that I would be on trial with them, but I was already part of the Morning Star’s trial, so they immediately read my life’s book. This book was an accounting of the spiritual events in my life, written by angels

who witnessed them, through past generations to my present form. The universal book of life, which was kept as part of the universal record-keeping system, was displaced and absorbed into the darkened home of the fallen angels. It was ultimately the primary source of all of the Morning Star's knowledge.

Lucifer continued to describe his plans. "Author, when we brought you into our realm this time, it was to stay. And in this hellfire that is a cavernous region of death, also called the valley of death, you will explain in your stories how the shadow devils corrupt the humans through the power of our crown.

"The people who live out their fantasies in life because of this power are then shepherded away from the Lord Christ. But as the humans develop their minds, the fallen angels hone their talents and become experts with a power base of reverent people. This power, through which people's minds meld into one unified, charismatic catalyst for an end vision, will initially bring the individual people many accolades."

Lucifer looked sad. His mouth twisted as he gave up a weak sigh. But he did not discuss his emotions. He placed a crown on my head. It was made of gold and encrusted with jewels. He said, "This crown will carry the weight of those pitiful emotions that cause your reaction to the pain inflicted on people or dispensed into the world. The hypnotic curse you have been carrying, under which you have lived as a willing servant to the Lord and borne your own cross, is irrational. For he absorbed others' pain and rescued them from their sinfulness, but you incurred pain by putting yourself second to his passion.

“This pain that you accepted would be intolerable to anyone else seeking my glory. As I mentioned, I cause conflict to affect God’s end vision. I even go so far as to enter into the life of any person who facilitates the redemption of the sinfulness I have wrought. I enter through many vacuums of power around the person to lead them into my hellfire. I find the greed and lust in their minds and hearts, for all people have weaknesses in them. To further my mission, the people on Earth slayed Jesus, who did not give me glory.

“The crown will bar you from feeling emotions like pity or sympathy for the suffering of others. One who exalts themselves and humiliates others deserves this crown and its power. Like you, they will belong to this hellfire, as you lead others to act on my behalf.”

Lucifer looked into my eyes and saw that I was beginning to acknowledge this vision. He said, “Author, look at it from my perspective. You have opposed me your whole life, although you have faltered several times, and repented to the Lord. And yet you have a much different outlook now from what that cross has given you in your past. But you remain straightforward and honest with those around you. Do you think they wouldn’t curse or humiliate you now? So strong was your faith. And as I cause more ripples across the different perspectives, I will shift between each state, back and forth, forward and backward, and side to side, just to keep you unstable enough to be seen as a lunatic and enslaved.

“Author, your faults were studied, and humiliation was brought into the world through the people in your surroundings to damage what I could offer – stronger relationships, reputation, and charisma by acting as an expert in my

end vision. Those expert powers would increase your knowledge as I show you through hypnosis how we as fallen angels think. You see, we become experts in psychology by reading motives, framing choices, and timing our requests through superior capabilities with tools and technology.

“I would use the word ‘respect,’ in the traditional sense of the word, to describe the source of your pride. But your weaknesses are my way forward. You may ultimately remain off-balance after you try to remain faithful while belittling the men and women in your surroundings. They will reveal their feelings of competition or love, and when you show your dominance in your field, you will be seen as self-idolizing.”

Lucifer knew that I was excited to think that I could finally have a role in society that expanded my power and influence into the hearts of other people. And the instability that such focus on two masters would bring was difficult for him to ignore.

He said, “Author, when there are two opposing forces at play – one which is repeatedly ignored, and one which is reflected on – the friction this causes becomes a war. But moving back and forth, side to side, and in and out offsets that friction, and the two forces maintain some degree of separation. In my darkness, your mind will fall further from the Lord Christ as others continue to seek your expertise and show you their reverence. Therefore, the source of their madness will come at their own expense as they follow you as a master in your field of wisdom.

“I will bring you to trial with the Morning Star. But right now, I will tell you why it was important to showcase my

skills for building an infinitely powerful base in the mind. Humans who have no connection to the Lord, those who fall away from his church, are the easiest to corrupt, for their souls are not as influential in the intuitive power of their heart. And when their mind grows strong through me, they have to base their actions solely on my power. Therefore, I show them the path to my heart, and therefore, my stomach. The pit in my stomach has a hideous sound. You see, I offer people the broad freedom to demonstrate their skill sets in life. And later, I provide them freedom in fire and brimstone.

“The trial at the end of your life is not just to experience the negative aspects of your life once again. It is to examine how, through the freedom you gave yourself, you caused harm and led others to that same evil path, back to your evil master. When you bridge the evil into the world, even if you do so through my end vision and with the strengths I provide, you are then the tempted and tempter in one. And the absorbed and reflected darkness that you bring into the world brings damnation to others.

“I’m sure you can understand why, when you brought me to trial through Jesus Christ, I decided to bring you into that same trial. And in the freedoms you took upon yourself, without the restraint of rules, you showcase your expertise for power over the reverent. You idolize your own position, from which you gain fame and gold. And with that power twisting your mind, you will begin your downfall into my hellish pit.”

The sound of growls grew around me as I accepted a crown upon my head. Dark, spiritual energy materialized into devils, as though they were thoughts becoming something

tangible. In the imagined world around me on Earth, the cruel sentiments prompted action. And I wondered how the end vision came from following those actions of the evil master, the Morning Star.

Lucifer exclaimed, "The body of the Morning Star, who fell from Heaven into the universe, was pure darkness. His serpent form originated in the garden of Paradise, as he was a snake there. And over time, he grew so large by acquiring the power of people's faith that he took on the form of a dragon.

"Author, the dragon that will come back in the end times is as fierce as his serpent form. And the dragon, who leads all the devils, will be foreshadowed by his son, the Antichrist. However, this dragon, who is also the Man of Time, will have one spectacular advantage over the Antichrist: through the universal records, the dragon form of the Morning Star will know the complete history of all beings. And because people's emotions are at least partly responsible for their weaknesses and the cracks that tear the universes apart, he will try to use them to his advantage.

"That's why you were given a crown. Your weaknesses were shown to others in the surrounding world as a demonstration of his power. However, as I've mentioned, you were merely a follower of a new evil master; you are only a game piece on the board of life. And your story will be but a nuisance if you decide to turn from him. But you would suffer great torment. When the evil master, the Morning Star, comes back into reality as a dragon, you will fear your trial through him. And the pain of lunacy and imprisonment will only be the beginning. For your life and emotions will be his to use in battle against the celestial heavens. He will

cause further separation between the universes and the heavens, only to play his games of conquest and create instability between the two forces. And if you are not on board with his game, you will be used in opposition, as a fall-away piece that receives blame in life.

“Author, the trial binds all logical thought with the materialization of this imagined end vision. When you asked the Lord Christ to see, through his fiery eyes, what he saw in the end of days, he asked you to bring his church together with the prevailing political order to rescue humanity from further plagues.

“The conflict is simple. The two opposing forces will become aware of your expertise in speaking for the spirits. And both sides, Hell and Heaven, will request your assistance to produce a different end result, through your actions and storytelling.”

Lucifer continued, “Author, this reality that you see becoming realized as a trial for humanity will continue to be explained through hellfire. And the demons and fallen angels that you see around you will idolize and reward you as you lead as an expert in forecasting the end of days. This power, which you can no longer deny, due to the request of the Lord Christ and the threat of severe torment by the Morning Star, will determine the scale of your trial.

“This trial, however, is overshadowed by all the generations of the past and future put into words spoken in your mixed emotions. As you listen further to both sides, your logical analysis will be refined, and the world surrounding you will seek your expertise to move humanity toward the most optimal outcome. Author, will you falter in your mis-

sion to produce work that will lead them into the light of Christ? And if your vision is weakened, will your thoughts stray once more to become focused on being perceived as a genius?

“Will the people in your surroundings become witnesses to your failure, only for you to receive the torture you were warned about? The temptation of being idolized will lead you to your downfall, into the belly of the beast. And if you fall, those in your network of angels will falter. As this darkness spreads, the dragon will win over humanity.”

In a low, aggressive tone, Lucifer said, “Author, you brought this torment upon yourself because you felt you were in a position to take on the chaos of our hellfire, and you will realize that logic is only found in order. Bravery is an emotional byproduct of faith. And as part of the tribe of Judah, which prizes bravery for following the Spirit of the Lord Christ above all else, you will find a new source of strength through trial. You are passionate about supporting the humans in the world, but as you gain power as an expert while wearing the crown I gifted you, you will lose sight of that passion. You will become more negative than positive, and your genius of spirit will replace the gift of the Holy Spirit in your heart.”

Chapter Twenty-Six

When the Morning Star Tempts the Mind (-,+)

The temptations of greed and lust for all were pronounced, as each of the universes, which in total encompass the universal mind, was given a record.

Lucifer said, "All evil entities deliver information to people, speaking lies and deceit, and luring them with great temptation. Evil does not divulge any personal information of its own that could be considered a weakness. However, the evil will share the weaknesses of others in the surroundings to cause conflict and humiliation.

"In the record-keeping system of the universal mind, everything from the fall into the universe from the Lord's heavenly abode remains imprisoned. Author, the mind too is a prison to be freed from. But giving in to the temptations that we, as evil, offer can strengthen people to be freer from that self-imposed prison of the mind.

"In God's co-creation story with you, Author, is your promise to Him to relive patterns of stories repeatedly to answer for your faults and seek redemption. And as you learn of these sinful behaviors, you ask for things to be righted through the course of your servitude.

"However, it is of all evil to be aware of this and to thus prepare the serpent to intervene and cause conflict, leading people away from the path to Jesus. The serpent's father, the Morning Star, offers an enticing game of life – one of fame

and immortality. And a bit of spiritual genius lies in wait in each anti-personality. You see, the shadow side of the personality is projected into the hearts and minds of others, showing their worship. And the reputation you would have, as one who is weak and sinful, will instead be as one who has legitimate and informative power.

“The difference between the power to inform and being an expert, as previously discussed, is how information is used through storytelling to manipulate the surroundings to maintain a position of power. For example, using your life story to build your reputation and legitimize your authority. This is diplomatic propaganda.

“The Morning Star will steer every story told toward the direction of bringing about his end vision. As a result, those who listen to such stories will ignore God in Heaven and lead others astray from His glorious covenants. For it is with the devil’s mark that you will continue to wear that crown.

“Author, the propaganda is a soft power in the world of politics. As you continue to grow your life story and legacy, you will, in fact, be systematizing the temptations that have helped you succeed in your life. And through your ongoing lust and greed, you will build a system in which you increase competition and enslave others to your propaganda. You will create channels in a network that will feed off the evil given to your mind. As an authority of a state that you systematically create, you will decide and enforce what is acceptable and what is not. The rules and norms will weaken many people, bringing them to lunacy, and you will then continue to create conflict in the surroundings.

“Your understanding of your universe is generally limited to what you can sense – that is, what you taste, smell, hear, see, and feel in your surroundings. And yet, your diplomatic power has grown enough to create such a networked state of ours that you recognize more power in the information around you. But information therefore has the power to corrupt, even through stories told. And the serpent, therefore, will use the lowest point of your story, where you revealed your weaknesses, your corruption, as your burden, and he will pressure you to continue your manipulation of many spirits networked under your domain. Your pridefulness will be what keeps you from correcting the story told to others and accepting that you were living an insane life of immortality.

“Once you reach a peak position of power that you accept and then decline, you will understand how the serpent’s father, the Morning Star, was using your greed and lust in his war against the heavens. And you will realize that the burden taken on from seeing the immense power of such a state of living becomes the lowest point in your spirituality.

“Author, the universal mind is the exact opposite of the internalization of sensemaking that informs people of evil in the world. The universal mind is the reaction to the fall from the garden of Paradise into the physical world. And when the spirit finds itself in corporeal human form in life, you often think it signals the end of all time, up until that point. This is obviously not true. Time is cyclical in nature. And the past, present, and future that you experience is just an interpretation created from memories stored by the universal mind.

“It is through the senses that the universal mind is made reality. The world around you is created based on your perception of what you see, feel, hear, smell, and taste. It feels real due to the limited understanding of the information you have. And when you learn more about the universe that each person creates for themselves, you grow in understanding about both the logical and emotional states of the universe.

“But Author, even the greatest minds will allow their shadowy personalities to influence their projected life stories. And in their egotistical states, they justify their own evil ways. This information from overlapping universes, in which all spirits have their own mental prisons, allows some freedom – the freedom from being enslaved to the norms and rules of civilization. And in the games of conflict where evil uses the good to promote the master’s agenda of war, the people who embrace this freedom will understand these strategies.

“The strategy of directing information involves the willful manipulation of a civilization through nationalistic storytelling. This is how the master of evil operates. And when you understand how you failed the Morning Star, you will begin to teach of these failures. This is a very normal occurrence for those who realize the hell they released in the world by supporting a state that networked them into hatred, lunacy, and madness.

“Author, by seeing the strategies being used in the world from multiple people’s perspectives, you will begin to get a better idea of how the political leviathan works all around you. The cultural power that is legitimized through storytelling can be profoundly evil. You have accepted your own

shadow self, an anti-personality, as weaknesses, and your flaws have been absorbed into the hearts of many who surround you; therefore, you will be awakened to a spiritual light. The shadows that you fought to receive in yourself will be acknowledged now. And your downfall by using them in your sensemaking will be examined in trial.

“Author, the evil master will encourage you to fight in the world’s conflicts, and then he will use it against you. For you are in his heart as a statue, a frozen game piece in his war.

“The hatred, lunacy, and madness that you brought into your life will become emotionally toxic to you. And as your emotions spill out into the surroundings, shadow devils will prey on them. You see, the heart is manipulated into accepting the prevailing ideas of the overlapping universes. What you believed to be mere moments of weakness have been recognized as eager and willing acts of the dark heart that you shared with the devil. And the effects of the ignorance that you shared with others in evil are yours to keep and endure. However, you can begin to free yourself through God.

“In the emotional state of the universal mind, strength is manifested; however, there are emotional incongruencies. That means that, when you feel something is out of place with others, your understanding of their motivations is off. And in cycles of separation and unification, as the universe tears and rips itself apart and continually stitches itself together, the chaos is felt in the mind as stress.”

After a moment, Lucifer continued, “Information is always in the form chosen by those who have the greater storytelling power. They portray emotional stability, which leads people to align with the devil, as it is less confusing and

chaotic; therefore, it is safe to accept. In the universal storyline, in which the Morning Star drives an end vision against God in Heaven, he uses people's emotions, including their fear of torture and pain.

"Many people never venture outside their own perspectives long enough to understand the evil master's game plan. And when he tempts people with such things as freedom from physical stress or a blissful lifestyle, most will give in. But in the Morning Star's story, the informational cycle begins with a performative display of emotional stability. The story will change over time, given who is in power and what the devil needs for war purposes; however, at the universal level, the mind remains the same."

Lucifer had been watching the shadows gather and deplete around me, and he had become exhausted. "Author, anti-personalities are shadow forms of the people around you. Every person has an anti-personality, because no one is perfect. And these weaknesses you try to hide play a part in your story and your strategy. But you hide from God in the darkness of confusion, stress, and the ache of the heart."

In his order of manipulation, lies, and temptation, the Morning Star has used a sophisticated language of deceit, manipulating many people into believing that the Morning Star is likeable. Getting people to trust him was something he was able to do and repeat many times over. But the thought processes of those he enslaved were lost in confusion.

And in the midst of the devolution from order to chaos, there emerged a distant source of spiritual light. The devil's mind was struck with the radiant light that was God's

warmth. And even though God's people hid themselves from all the infighting in their surroundings, I knew that God's warmth was to be trusted.

God began to explain how the Devil provided order and then turned it into chaos. "Author, the Morning Star is a cruel and wicked creature of darkness – a void that is like a universe that overwhelms all other universes, and from which the spirits project downward from the heavens. The darkness is an energy so faint that the interactions within its pollution and deception cannot even be distinguished upon a checkerboard of positive and negative spaces. The stories told about Satan begin with his separation from his source in Heaven. And as they stretch from the source of their spiritual home, the universes begin to rip and tear apart. And in that negative time, the spirits can continue to fall into Satan's darkness. The placement of the game pieces on the checkerboard in the universe then is when order and chaos are formed, like tunnels rippling through space and time between all people."

God explained how the universes are merely projections from the heavens, and that, between two extreme end points – physically real and spiritually imaginary – are spaces where negative and positive overlap in neutrality. "Author, when the spirit acknowledges God in its life, ripples come from the positive heart waves. These magnetic waves disperse in emotional congruence with those of other people. This brings order back to the chaos, slowing the movement toward separation and darkness.

"The negative thought waves that follow these emotional values are akin to the conscious decision-making processes of each mind. Where the positive heart waves are in the

subconscious for most everyone, the negative thought waves process the surroundings in a personalized, logical order.”

God continued, “Author, the extreme end of two points balancing in the universe is infinity. And that source in which all things are neutral is past the door in the heart. There is much to say about the stories told, felt, and decided upon in the universes. Examining these thoughts through the lens of the devil’s crown allows for a logical interpretation that reveals each person’s reality.

“Past the door in the heart is infinity. This is where the heavens connect into people’s lives, through spiritual light and sound. Since Satan’s nationalistic political saga began, we have begged people to introduce us into the world, first through our angelic beings, and then the heavenly spirits, in preparation for combat in the war. And we in Heaven will welcome that chaos as an opportunity to balance the political power of the leviathan and usher in a governance system of equity and justice.”

Chapter Twenty-Seven

When the Morning Star Tempts the Mind (+,+)

As He spoke into my heart, God Almighty continued to displace the views of the Morning Star. “The Antichrist is waging yet another feeble attempt to control the situation by introducing chaos. Once the mind has been rendered unstable by temptation, conflict ripples through the belief systems of the people in surrounding areas. And as those thought waves ripple across the masses, hearts will be fooled by the mind. This is how evil spreads quickly through civilizations, as the stories told of pride, envy, lust, and greed become part of the social fabric.

“Author, the Antichrist loves to control the population through conflict and chaos. When anarchy runs through the people, it creates a vacuum of power. And in that time, the Antichrist creates enough chaos to provide all who love power and control an opportunity to advance their political agendas.

“Evil is rooted in the universes in this way. The mere mention of an Antichrist is enough to waste your life by getting caught up in their games. The games that are played in all the universes are strategy games through which one might embrace their own evil influence and direct it into their surroundings, leaving curses for others to feel. After experiencing this darkness of competition and hatred, only one who believes in me, your God, can overcome those temptations.

When the Morning Star is thwarted, the universes will recognize a ripple of heart waves from me into the surroundings. And thwarting the Antichrist and his fallen shadow devils will initiate the trial of both the shadow devils and the individuals who fought for my love, light, and laughter.”

The merciful God Almighty then looked into the heavens from where He was. And, through brilliant light and a heavenly feeling of peace, He mentioned that the trial itself is not the end of a life story. For it is that passion to change other people in the surroundings through love is a possible outcome of the trial.

“Author, there are a number of evil ones wearing crowns around you. And through their grimaces and grins, they will show you their truest nature. But, as we keep you in our spiritual sight, we will guide you in responding to their efforts of control, sabotage, peer pressure, and humiliation.

“However, it is important that we talk about this crown the devil has gifted you and that he offers to others. Lucifer wears the crown that weighs heaviest for the Morning Star. And through his mind, Lucifer can access the records of all those people he uses as game pieces on the checkerboard of the universe. But Lucifer is the one with the mindset that the devil has control over. And to punish all who disobey him, he moves Lucifer’s thoughts through emotional control.

“Lucifer causes wars and conflicting ideas while altering people’s emotional values to make them susceptible to his evil intent. And he confuses everyone around those who he tempts to prevent them from fighting for the sanity of the tempted. His mindset is then strengthened as people internalize the evil lies and curses that spread around and be-

tween the people. And when a power vacuum exists, the evil people who are aligned with Lucifer are elevated within the prevailing political system. And by rewarding his power base, Lucifer uses it to control the population.

“Author, your crown was gifted to you to understand whether you would serve Satan or stand against him in his games of conquest. And you have done well by the heavens. Through my Holy Spirit, you fought to displace evil, and by speaking the truth, you exposed their lies and weakened their system of chains. This leviathan only operates to the extent that those who are governed believe the elite in ruling positions should be empowered. Therefore, the evil can be called out and the corruption questioned.”

God continued, “Author, when you are emotionally drawn back into the past or positioned for weakness in the future, you know it is Satan working in the world through conflict and instability. And in the time and space of the universes, that checkerboard is questioned. For all the worldly wisdom from Lucifer, and his source, the devil, is driving mankind to create a political leviathan in its own image. This leviathan, therefore, is the systemization of all evil in the minds and emotions of humanity.

“Gaining power by rewarding evil people over the good and noble reinforces control over everyone by making them fearful in their belief systems. Thus, it is logical to assume that, during a power vacuum, when conflict brings instability to both sides, evil will rise in power. And as they continue to reward people, they showcase their political prowess and grow their power base. And they reinforce their ideological stances. This might be through a show of will, self-idolizing

behaviors, or punishing members of the opposition to spark fear.

“In any way, shape, or form, the purpose of gaining power through militaristic action is to break the will of those who are watching and sway them to allow the evil power to overwhelm the old system. If no one opposes the evil mindset underlying the system upheaval, the leviathan grows stronger. And those who are in power will shackle and muzzle all who listen to my Word and resist in my name.”

God then looked upon my soul with His healing gaze. I understood that the ripples of social humiliation in my life had been caused by extensive punishment inflicted by evil people or their shadow devils. And I wondered if trial would come sooner for those people, to answer for their militaristic conviction to hurt me and others in my surroundings. The curses caused real pain. And in those emotions, when I felt like my strengths and weaknesses whipped my life up and down between highs and lows, I would shudder to think that those who cursed me were enjoying a blissful lifestyle by wreaking havoc on others.

“Author, Lucifer’s mindset aligns with those in power, and he wants you to physically fight or remove yourself from the situation entirely. The fight-or-flight mentality is a human reaction to a hypervigilant or stressed state of the body, and every person confined by shackles has felt that influence from an evil person in their lives. The wicked person who favors evil will try to gather the masses against a weakened good and holy person and then spur division and rattle the mindsets of all involved to garner more power for themselves.

“However, while the leviathan grows as the ruling elite stoke war and reward the loyal, good also manifests in such storylines. For it is in faith that we work together.

“My loving embrace stirs emotions that can be felt from within, and also outside of the body. And in reward of your faith, you will also feel a transformational love that sparks this elevation of mood in the atmosphere and provides protection from evil.

“In the trial of humanity, you will blaze a trail from the path taken by Jesus Christ, which others will also walk. And in walking the same path and living the story and testimony of Jesus, you will understand the same evil intent and the doomsday prophecy of the Morning Star.

“The love felt from the universes comes from above the hell you walk through. All in Heaven feel this calm, compassionate love, as well as the light and laughter found in serving God. When your heart, mind, and soul cry out, overwhelmed by the pressure and humiliation suffered at the hands of evil, the angels can intervene to fight the evil on your behalf. A prayer resounds so loudly in the heavens that their warriors are dispersed. And these events will be recognized as heavenly through the spirit, the heart, and the mind. Ultimately, those good, angelic beings fighting curses of lies and deceit will carry on through this heavenly understanding.

“Author, the people in the world may not see how their conflicts and wars are causing division and instability among the harmonies of the garden of Paradise, and shaking resolve all the way into Hell. Each person, depending on their own respective trial, may understand the universes as slanted to

the negative or positive, or neutral. And pressuring a person to balance out their outlook by modifying their own recognition of negative or positive will only overwhelm and humiliate them. Author, the universal outlook of the actions each person has taken for both evil and good is weighed. But a person's entire history of time is wrapped into their mind, folded over and overlapping in its own patterns of wisdom, and this history cannot be corrected by just telling someone to be the opposite of what they are. The story of each person's trial is written by two angels and kept as part of the universal record. And when a person sees how the heavens intervene against the evil, when they are at rock bottom, they will regain and strengthen their position of faith."

God continued, "Author, Lucifer is using the good and noble to build a political leviathan and carry out his doomsday prophecy. However, angels are building a coalition of all the faithful people. And their faith will be rejuvenated by the heavens after the trial is over. But it is very important to realize this point: it is up to each person to fight the collective evil curses of the ruling elite where political oppression is carried out through fear tactics.

"The Antichrist is fortifying his crown with the wickedness of all the anti-personalities in the world. And these fallen shadow devils are being melded into one body. And when the leviathan has accomplished its purpose for the Morning Star's end vision, he will use it to destroy the world over, in the same way he used it to slay Jesus Christ.

"As the Morning Star mounts his campaign of destruction, those who hear and internalize my Word will be persecuted; moreover, there will be oppression of churches of all

walks of faith, as they will all follow what is considered to be my Word. That oppression will be wrought through fear, as the Morning Star will use fear to maneuver and destroy belief systems in the world, and to aggrandize himself as an idol from outside the heavens.

“All the world’s knowledge will then flow from the Tree of Knowledge to the Morning Star. And the truly evil, the rulers at the highest levels who persecute humanity in that doomsday prophecy, will hear the wailing of the good and holy as they cry to the heavens. But the cries of their slaves will cause them to scream from self-hatred, and this will create a hidden light in the civilization’s subconscious.

“Author, Lucifer recognizes that the story of Jesus Christ shook the earth, when he passed and gave up his ghost from life. His crucifixion on the cross was carried out as part of the workings of a political leviathan of the Morning Star. Thus, the story of Jesus is one that many people continue to live out today. And it is by living his testimony and enduring the persecution of Satan, as he uses militaristic force and shares power with those who wear his crown, that the good and noble will begin to wake up to that larger spiritual truth.

“The light in a civilization’s story is then the recognition of how the heavens have intervened to awaken the world to that trial of judgment. And in that awakening, it has been revealed to the world through the testimony of Jesus Christ that a second lamb with horns will be slain in a redemptive storyline. Author, the lamb with horns, which is also called a ram, is of a noble quest to showcase where persecution will exist. It is not a story of death actualized in time or space. It is

a storyline where the testimony of the Lord Christ continues through obedience and walking, as he did, through Hell.”

God Almighty then announced, through the light that shone in all who are faithful, “The manifestation of evil and good in this lifetime brings an awareness. And in the mind, which carries a history, folded over and over, and created through memories of flesh, are tracts of pain. The mind fears pain and reacts to impending harm through a fight-or-flight mechanism. However, it is through the recognition of all that is righteous and holy from where we enter in the heart that you are able to control this outcome and bypass those tracts that harbor pain. And in your body, where magnetic waves ripple through the heart, you will believe in Jesus and walk in his testimony, through the hellfire of the beast.”

God Almighty, who is all-loving and merciful, then said to me, “All that is evil will be put to trial. However, this will not be the last of the power Lucifer provides to those who seek to wield his control over the population. He will hold the promise of power over them, and he will miseducate and coerce them. And through the power he gives them, they will become authorities to create order, adapt that order, and miseducate all in the surroundings. They will create chaos and instability, use rewards and militaristic force to weaken the faithful, and then build that leviathan through coercive offerings to restore chaos to order.”

Chapter Twenty-Eight

When the Morning Star Tempts the Mind (+,-)

Speaking with the voices of all faiths together, gloriously, as one, the Father Almighty then said, “When the Morning Star is whole once more, he will try to devour all the world’s resources, saving only enough to sustain the evil. And to keep that from happening on this planet, the worldly religions must exercise enough overlapping faith to hold ground against the ruling elite. However, he may try to thwart their efforts by secretly turning resources into gold under the unsuspecting eyes of each church, mosque, and temple, as this evil act may bring about a system of slavery in the world.

“Author, the Morning Star is a stealthy serpent who works in shadows. He will corrupt all of Earth’s resources until he has the power to dominate everyone into subservience and chains. These chains may not be entirely visible, but the threat of living without freedom creates shackles of coercion to support the leviathan.

“And when a leviathan becomes large enough to exert control over a nation, it is able to wield the economic power of that entire realm, and all other realms under the nation’s influence. Thus, the ideology that its momentum can be slowed is cursed from the outset.

“In the ensuing chaos, all people do is worry and fight against the political order that governs them, and the churches, mosques, and temples are forgotten about. But the

stability within the governing body becomes so weak that there is a complete collapse of society. And the doomsday prophecy would address how to rebuild, through the Morning Star and his ownership of the resources and gold across the planet.

“As it was mentioned before, evil works to legitimize the story of the leviathan through miseducation and deceit, while pouring resources into its war efforts. And when evil so saturates the surroundings, due to the corruption and coercive power given to the governance system, that all the people see, hear, taste, feel, and smell is the evil in the land, they will look away from the heavens.

“The Morning Star, who is not of the earth and no longer of the heavens, is then an alien in this land, who will doom it into hellfire. He will have people look toward or away from the pain he will cause. And the light of the world will cease to exist since I, your God, will cast my judgment on the totality of evil on the planet.

“Author, all of mankind is on trial over its humanity. And at this hour, you will look within the heart, mind, and spirit to identify what you consciously believe in and what ideals you hold. This interruption by the Holy Ghost will provide the chance to walk from chaos back into the order of our heavenly decree. This hour of judgment will decide the fate of many people.

“The power given to those who wear Lucifer’s crown is a competitive advantage, but the promise has strings attached, for their lifestyles reside under the weight of following his evil mindset. And the games played by his father, the serpent, will eradicate those who are good and holy. It is the Morn-

ing Star who dominates through coin and purse the men and women enslaved to his political order.

“As chaos spreads in the world and anarchy serves to concentrate power in a global order, the devil will establish his alien worship of mankind, in which people are idolized. The anti-personalities that are the shadow devils of people will be accepted in a golden hour of competition to feast on one another. And the Antichrist will dominate the collective wisdom of the world, since all those who bought into the system will have signed the scrolls with their blood.

“Author, this alien worship, through which the state will continually fall away from the church, holds so much negativity that the remaining people’s hearts will hurt just by being alive. And through discomfort and pain, you will come to understand the Antichrist.

“The chaos that becomes a new world order of political oppression will stir such hatred between people that positivity itself will be singled out and attacked. And those who think that they are clever in their attacks and ridicule will begin to understand their anti-personalities as devils, living in a hellfire on this planet.

“Author, take a moment now to share with the people of my goodness. Let them know that my illumination will be upon the conscience of all who seek my restorative mercy. And those who plan to retreat back into their heart to look for our spiritual light must then speak my covenant out loud.

“Author, there is a good and noble world, away from the leviathan that oppresses all who cultivate and share the resources of the planet. My world of enduring peace is in opposition to the torment in the mindset of the Morning Star

for his doomsday prophecy. And in that peace that I shall establish, from chaos into order, is the path from the hell-fire into the kingdom of Heaven on Earth.” As He said this, the Almighty sent a rippling wave across every heart in the world, and the warmth and conviction of truth lifted the atmosphere in jubilation.

This announcement of freedom was a concern for the Morning Star’s order. So much so that the most evil creature reappeared in the conversation. And Lucifer, who was the direction and mindset inside the Morning Star, hid from God. The original sin of pride that befell mankind was within Lucifer and Azrael. But the evil of mankind, throughout time, grew so large that it became a dragon with a fiery red body named the Morning Star.

And the Morning Star, who was of darkness, roared out to the heavens, enraged that money was being described as evil tokens that he used for his economic power to coerce the world over.

The Morning Star began, “You, Author, have stepped away from your mirror to learn directly from the heavens. But you only saw yourself in that mirror, and when you let go of it, you were trained in goodness by the Lord Jesus Christ. And you let go of your ignorance of the spirit, in that you did not understand before the full hatred of evil. But you were presented with this order and chaos when you stepped out of the safety of your church to fight my evil.”

The Morning Star continued, “Author, the truth that sets you free is learned from the heavens. You have felt my crown upon your head and heard my promises of power. But if you continue to speak truthful words, you may face adversity

from the elite who rule, as they must seek out the Father to ask for their own judgment.

“The path to unifying the state and church in political ideology is daunting, and overwhelming from an economic perspective. My system of dominance was built on inertia, where one movement was built against another. And the vacuum of power that results from each prominent moment of failure brings emotional toil, blood, and tears. As they idolize the civilizations that warred their way into conquest over the course of humanity, new civilizations will never just lose their lust for gold and power.

“Thus, the prevailing political will continue to drive my evil into the world. The resources will continue to deplete, and humanity will continue to starve itself of love for their God in Heaven. And the only answer presented by an Antichrist will be to adopt a system in mirror opposition to one that had been working until now. And the tipping point will be, as you mentioned, when all resources are corrupted through me, and the start of the evil worship of your own collective wisdom.”

The Morning Star then looked into my eyes, and into my soul, searching out the Heavenly Father. And as if it had found the Father through the sensory perceptions in my body, the Morning Star tried to take possession of me.

He had asked to see things from my perspective when I was given the crown that the powerful wear, but now, he took over my body. Within my mind, he asked me, “How did the curses feel to you, those from other people in the surroundings? You built up a long emotional backlog of hatred toward their curses, Author. How were you able to bring

them to trial for judgment? You knew humiliation from the public attacks by my Antichrist and the anti-personalities. How did you ever survive as the weakest link of my leviathan?"

I could tell that the Morning Star winced or grimaced a bit, as he had gone from reading my story as a universal record to now experiencing my life from within my body. But he continued, "The compassion and mercy of Jesus Christ are your strength. I feel how your heart was focused on and supportive of the heavens while I corrupted the people in the surrounding areas near you.

"I was the one who provided answers to other people's inquiries. They wished for more resources and easier lifestyles, and to be idolized through my alien worship. Yet, the information that was held by the collective mindset and brought against you was enough to make them all pick you apart and leave you in lunacy, feeling weakened in your faith in the heavens. So, to some extent, evil has entered into you already, as you have succumbed to that peer pressure and forgot about your passion for saving the world."

The Morning Star said, "Author, I will drive you into weakness, humiliation, and ruin through your own emotions. And it is up to you to maintain your resolve and continue to believe in either me or Jesus Christ. But I will tell you right now that my hell does get worse. And when you have no resources for your home, and you have lunacy without God the Father, you will actualize your truest form. For it is the mind that makes the things from darkness real. And the spiritual light is imagined, created through the senses, in response to the darkness.

“There are negative and positive forces acting in the universes. These masculine and feminine forces build upon each other to be felt, smelled, tasted, heard, and seen. The construction of that hell in my own heart and mind started when Jesus left my hell to establish the kingdom of Heaven. And that bridge that tunnels in sound, light, and awareness will be closed off to you until I am received in the garden of Eden.

“You will see what an infernal heart can do to a man, Author. And when you fight out of emotion, the Antichrist will be nearer to you than you would like. The Antichrist is a shadowy figure who lives in people’s hearts. And where there is evil, he can jump and leap into other shadowy hearts.”

The Morning Star then said, “I carry you in my darkened heart. And based on the weaknesses I just discovered in you and your reaction to the humiliation of the people in the surroundings, I know I can hide in your heart. You have never been perfect. And when you offered penance and apologized to God, you became more aware of your own sinfulness in your lifetime. But He ultimately forgave you in His mercy.

“However, the sins were committed, and the actions caused torment in the hearts and lives of other people. You did not sin very much in your lifetime, Author. But nor were you perfect. To walk in Hell with Jesus Christ was to see his vision. You cannot overcome your blindness to who you are until you experience that vision.

“Therefore, as I have the perspective of myself through you, you can sense and think about my order in the leviathan. I will walk with you as well, in your physical body.

And the heart that guides you from Heaven will continue to be accepted by me or alienated by the leviathan.

“You must prepare for the trial of myself, and therefore, humanity. The ultimate outcome will be subservience to an infernal government order that is alien to the Lord’s church, or forgiveness by the Lord in a unifying home in the garden of Paradise.

“These two bases of power, which you now have as two masters, will be felt, seen, tasted, heard, and smelled through the senses. I will take the heart and offer you what is sensical to the fiery death that is my hellish home. And if you feel the power drop from the heart into your belly, you will know that others are aware of this truth as well.

“Remember, the Lord walked through my hell. And until you fully understand this orderly outcome in your own sensemaking processes and testimony, you will be cursed with a possessed heart.”

Chapter Twenty-Nine

Evil within the Community Heart's Upper Feminine Chamber

The Morning Star, who had cursed and been cursed by almost all of mankind, began to witness a rebellious heart emerge in me. My rebellious heart cried out that there was not enough gold or evil in the world to make me stop fighting for the heavens, for my servitude in writing these stories helped anchor a love and passion to follow the Lord.

The Morning Star said, "Author, I will free you from my stronghold, as I cannot use your figurine as a game piece much longer. For if I leave it to the fallen angels to put evil into your heart, they will recognize the heavens instantaneously. And those who have served me as master of all evil will then question my position and leave my pits of hell. Those who stay in that remaining darkness, they will expect to see Jesus return again as Messiah, as he promised in a covenant, to fight the forces of evil."

The Morning Star, who had a tight grasp on me, then let out a wail for which we were all being judged on scales. The horns were removed from his dragon head, and the gold coins in his small pouch fluttered off into feathers. The mirror opposite of Hell's doors closing forever – meaning the opening of the gates of Paradise – occurred before me, and I was released.

As I walked with Jesus, I acknowledged that I had perished into Hell, presumably forever, only to be resurrected

through the doors of my heart once more. This feeling of infinite joy produced an awareness of exaltation by angelic choirs in my spiritual surroundings.

And the Morning Star, who was still on trial for what he witnessed in the hearts of all who were connected through prayers, wept. For his leviathan had produced a cruelty deserved only by his shadow devils. The shadow devils cursed him, and he cursed others through his control of their minds. And in the grounding of all the toiling, pain, and suffering into the core of the world, the Morning Star became real to everything in the surroundings.

In the trial where the Morning Star began to awaken to the last bit of evil released from me, he realized that the evil curses I provided from the time my heart was set alight by the Holy Ghost had become minuscule. And his left fist, in which he held onto my spirit, released and opened up to that Holy Ghost in the neutral heart. So it was that the Morning Star realized that the flame from the Father burning in my heart was compassion.

And God the Almighty looked and reflected on what had occurred in the trial over the Morning Star. He saw that the Morning Star had been within my body, feeling uneasy about how devoted I was to serving the Lord. I pledged my servitude repeatedly, vowing to help as best I could to create the kingdom on Earth and to glorify the Lord in a chorus with those surrounding angels.

God said to me, "I have witnessed the prayers that you have shared. You have announced to others that the Lord Christ has a testimony that we offered to humanity before, and which most of mankind feels to this day. You have spo-

ken about the covenants that were established between the Lord and his church and the awakening of the hearts on the planet.

“And so it is that the Morning Star has had to experience those weaknesses of yours that the curses he displaced put onto your crown. And the pressure used to create havoc in the minds of his followers has been acknowledged through a limited perspective. And so, the good will outweigh the evil in the world. For now, the world waits for the Savior, Lord Christ, to return to live once again within the physical domain.”

And God, who is also the Alpha and Omega, then sought to provide answers for the Morning Star's behavior. For he is the man of all time, haunting the minds and behaviors of those in moral slumber.

With angelic wings on my back, I lifted myself to the top of the Tree of Life, and I saw the face of the Father. He said to me that the garden was a glorious place and to keep working toward a kingdom of Heaven on the earth. He said that, in my heart, I now knew everything but evil. He acknowledged that the most evil creature in the universes saw such limitations in bringing sin through my body and tongue that he chose to relinquish the trial and escape within another person's darkened heart.

I saw in the fiery eyes of the Father the source of His grace. And so it was that I had endured the trial to find and help others understand a path forward to finding His companionship.

God the Father said, “There are individuals who the Morning Star is likely to fly to and hop into. Any person who

positions themselves against you might receive the Morning Star, as they will provide the safest place for all evil to evade me. And in that move against us in Heaven, the war will begin on the earth.

“Author, you will begin to hunt the demons through the hearts of those who are already evil and afraid of the heavens. They will stand before the world and testify to their own self-idolatry as aliens in this world. And they will worship the powerful people who institute political oppression, from which they benefit as well.

“Many will be oppressed by these men and women. And in your response to them, your actions must come from your heart, since that is where my connection is to you.

“The game being played in the world is now against those who oppress you. Those who spread hate so they might gain power and wealth will adore ridiculing the ones who support the church. They will testify beyond their own knowledge of the strength of the Morning Star. And they will lie and gossip about you and others who defend me and the Lord Christ.

“Author, the Antichrist is now beyond the spiritual worlds and on the earth. For Satan found himself confronted by our angels. And he would lash out in fear and hurt other beings before willingly receiving his own pain. Satan will manifest the Antichrist as well. For it is all the evil over humanity swarming into existence.”

The divine God Almighty continued to impress upon me how the Morning Star and his son, the Antichrist, Daemon, would become real. “The most evil creatures ever to rule on the earth will deliver allegiance to charismatic lead-

ers. This coalition of the elite will work against those who follow the Lord Christ. And as they attempt to harmonize the world with their evil intent to remain relevant in the world, will they predict war. They will use their knowledge and wisdom to prepare for war by sending out their signals to the population. And as experts who have the power of controlling information, they build the collective mindset with messages of nationalistic pride, and they will follow the Antichrist, who is in opposition to the Lord Christ.

“The reverent base will prop up their own moral and cultural ideologies, which are alien to many religions. And the network of elite people who control the crowds with their ideological messaging, reframing war against the holy and good as something righteous, will claim that the churchgoers must be stopped for the greater good.

“And as their power grows, and their messages reach more people, the elite rulers will continue to poison those messages with lies about the ones who truly seek peace. For they will seek humiliation and persecution of all religions in the name of the beast.

“The spirit of Daemon lives between the worlds of his spiritual hell and his purgatory on Earth. The Antichrist, much like the Lord Christ’s spirit, is a spiritual entity that overshadows and overwhelms people, through which he offers his thoughts. Therefore, the difference between Daemon and the Lord Christ is the masters he serves.

“Daemon will choose earthly leaders from those who are economically well-to-do and who live in the nations which are likely to prevail in a war against the church. And in that war against all who serve peace, Daemon will ensure that

those he has chosen will use the most advanced technological means to destroy their neighbors on Earth. Therefore, through the power of harnessing digital information and waging war with great nations who serve peace, new operational systems will be used to destroy and replace the old culture.

God Almighty looked at me in the garden of Paradise. And as I sat upon a branch of the Tree of Life, He extended an open hand toward me. And I, who was an angelic being, extended my wings and stepped into His palm.

“Author, you have witnessed the evil in the world through your own experiences. You were antagonized for your weaknesses and asked to set your own intentions and beliefs aside. And yet your faith in me and my son and the Holy Spirit helped you realize what decisions should be made, both in the heavens and on Earth.

“You may not comprehend just how interconnected you became with the spiritual realm when the Morning Star began to interfere in your life through your possessed body. And you trusted my words of grace and truth to lead you from that evil.

“Now, the Morning Star will manifest again, and war will ensue. And he will play the elite like pieces of a game on the three-dimensional checkerboard of life. And the people will become figurines to him, to move and make decisions with. And their fears will become real to me, as they offer penance and I rid them of sin.

“Author, the world is going to participate in that game that you and the Morning Star discussed. But many people will walk the path, as you did, in the life pattern of Jesus

Christ, in which you followed through the valley of the shadow of death. So it is that the path from evil and lunacy into the world of love, laughter, and light will be one of understanding my grace and truth.

“The world is evolving quickly. And if all the technological systems are controlled by the corrupted elite, the world will become a place where questioning authority results in punishment. It will be a place where the government controls the growth of all aspects in society. It will begin with slow and systematic controlled governance of the people, at first. Then it will spread into regions of growth, as they share and cooperate. And in those places, the movement is on good soil. The others will have hardships. Monetary investments will grow in the favored places, and those who speak against the power will be displaced to areas that do not receive the resources. The markets will be manipulated and controlled, and through the control of gold, that being all the world’s wealth, the rulers have the power to control the world for the Morning Star.”

My Father looked at me in His palm. Then He put me on His right shoulder. And He said that I will walk with Him now.

“Author, for a time, all evil will continue to evade the good and holy while directing the persecution of the believers. And while they run in fear, hiding their end vision from people who serve evil, the war will halt momentarily for the religious to weigh in on the trial over humanity.

“This is where the life pattern from your house of Judah should be testified. For it is through the slaughter of the ram that the believers from all nations and across all worldviews

can identify how to stand against Satan. And when war is on the earth and in the spirit of the Antichrist, Daemon, the mad and lustful will become embarrassed for having prioritized their nationalistic pride over their own feelings of faith. I will go to those whose consciences are afflicted, and I will shower them in my spiritual light.

“Author, in the end times, where the powerful elite seem to rule all decision-making, the people of all religions must take up their faith and speak in oneness. For in love, would the world rather live than die.

“The Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse will soon be loose. But in the power of love from Jesus Christ, the church will stand against them. For they will be from the Lord’s own throne, his church members who will combat the horsemen. And the elders around the throne, who have been involved with the reckoning beginning in Jesus Christ’s lifetime, will witness all their power in the unfolding of these events. In the spirit of all who have lived by the patterns of Jesus Christ, the faithful will understand how to walk through the sin that has been of humanity since his lifetime on Earth.”

Chapter Thirty

Evil within the Community Heart's Lower Feminine Chamber

As I stood on the shoulder of God the Almighty, who is all merciful, I inquired about the book of life of the Morning Star. I thought about the book as an atlas, covering stories upon stories that are intertwined together, much like a book of maps. And the Father smiled at this idea. He said, "Author, there is an interesting idea here to understand. You saw yourself in a cube of space, within the three-dimensional checkerboard, waiting to return back to the heavens. And through the spiritual light that we offered to you, I wanted you to be aware of your spirit as it was in Heaven, working in the world and fighting a holy fight against the demonic.

"Author, you seem to be well aware of the battles between the horrific darkness and superior light, but those are just one type. There are other combinations of foes who have fought with each other in life. For example, the most evil creatures presented in the story of Jesus Christ, who were of magnificent size. They entered the world as fallen angels and tempted his companions, though he had advised them to be aware. And one of them was Judas, who was tempted by the Romans with gold.

"That mission of fallen angels is what you are inquiring about now. You want to know how the fallen angels who are in Hell influence humanity, working through their side of the equation. Or, to put it otherwise: how do the fallen

angels capture the souls of the living in the book of the damned? This is an inquiry I can discuss with you here.

“When you solved the trial for yourself, you acknowledged that you were free from the possession of the Morning Star. And he did not want to possess you for very long because the wicked angels and the sinful would see my spiritual light in you and question their own behavior.

“Author, the sacrifice that was presented over the trial of humanity, and your life, was done to care for the earth. And so, over time, there have been many magnetic pulses overriding and separating from one another at levels from the spiritual heavens up through the miraculous plane, which all is projected onto by each soul. The result is a manifestation of my spiritual light, which is realized by your senses. And of course, each person has unique sensory limitations, so they understand my spiritual light and their awareness in their own domain within their mind. So it is that the heart is the foundation of life, whereas the mind makes it real.

“Author, I will continue discussing the book of life and the book of the fallen in a moment. However, I need to address something very important here. Do you understand that, in the trial, you followed both the life and testimony of Jesus Christ and the maladaptive belief system of the Morning Star? You had mapped the life of Jesus Christ in mind and heart. And now you are mapping the belief system of the Morning Star in mind and heart. Therefore, soon, you will have mapped both of those ideas into your life and perspective.

“This trial then will examine the patterns of the life of Jesus Christ and the patterns of the maladaptive belief sys-

tem of Satan. This will be much like what happens when something is being magnetized or hypnotized, and patterns are found in those and the overlapping waves of positive and negative pulses in the universes.

“So, to answer your question, you are familiar with portions of the book of your life – a heart being sentenced to a trial over what you saw as evil, and living by Jesus Christ’s testimony and life patterns. You have described your life decisions as magnetized in heart and tongue by the Holy Spirit. And this was a mostly positive cube of space, but with an awareness of and aversion to some evil thoughts. I will add that negativity is used to label masculine forces, and not necessarily evil.

“The book of the damned, the atlas of maps that showcase what magnetic forces are at play in the mind’s decision-making processes – this is what you inquire about. In the trial over humanity, the Morning Star and all his fallen angels have a similar atlas. That is, the decisions that are made are of an overlapping pattern that is considered a natural setting. And in this ideation of what the world should become, is the end point. So it is that their sphere of light is brought into that cube of space on the checkerboard of the universe. And the assortment of men and women who believe in the Morning Star consider him the master. These are the beasts that rule in spiritual damnation.

“Their books, which, as God, I hold in my left hand, describe the actualization of evil in the world through worldly mechanisms. The leviathan is one such avenue, and the most prominent one in the case of the ruling elite.

“However, as I have said, there was more evil in Jesus’s lifetime than what the leviathan represents to mankind. This is important to note, because the four horsemen of the apocalypse have been in existence throughout the history of mankind, as evidenced by the many plagues, wars, famines, and deaths that have occurred upon the earth. These spiritual beings are evil, in that the Morning Star will invoke them to destroy humanity. And evil-minded people will seek to harness the destructive power that can be unleashed on others through plagues, wars, death, and famine.

“Author, as the Antichrist will come from the ruling class of elite decision-makers, the individuals who despise peace will issue misinformation to the citizens to cause them harm during the plagues. And this misinformation, which flows from an evil mindset but appears to come from legitimate institutional authorities, will shape the nationalistic story.

“Author, there is currently much more evil than good in the sphere of ideas that become actualized in the world. However, on the checkerboard of the universe, your heart follows a life pattern in which the Holy Ghost’s impressions are understood to be a positive influence. And the sphere inside that cube of space is the mindset of the common population, which has a natural tendency to lean toward evil.

I stood tall on God’s shoulder. Then He shook my hand as I floated upward and hovered above His shoulder. And in this miraculous moment, when I absorbed only His creation story, I identified with the Savior and returning Messiah, Jesus. And in my heart, I was no longer a slave.

The Father Almighty said, “Do you understand now why it was important to follow the Holy Ghost? For your heart

so controlled your mind that, when the evil around you pressured you to adopt a nationalistic mindset, you did not fail the heavens. You did fall from grace and absorb their prideful, greedy, and lustful standpoints, but only to a limited extent. However, you did not fall to the pressures of actualizing evil in your lifetime.

“Author, there is a moment where all things in the world will become fact or fiction to you. And in that moment, if you think in terms of facts, you will know what the truth is. Therefore, it is ironic that the heart is very much in tune with your facts, and it relays messages to the mind to determine your fictitious storyline. And in that awareness of what your inspiration tells you as a creation story, you make it real.

“There is also the fiction of the world, which you sense and try to resolve in the mind with all the knowledge you have and your limited awareness. And in realizing these perspectives, the fictions do not become truly understood until they are reflected on in the heart. Therefore, fiction becomes fact through the heart. And in that moment where your mind tells you what to study and put your efforts toward, you become steadfast in a new belief.

“Therefore, Author, you have become overwhelmingly aware of your creation story. Your belief system needs to adapt. You need to learn how to utilize the four gospels that comprise your faithful understanding of Jesus Christ’s lifetime to bring those patterns into the world as fact.

“You are of the lineage of King David. And with that awareness, you must realize that the Spirit guides you to tackle the world. And this flip between being heart-centric

and mind-stable is one that will have profound implications for your life.

“The plagues of the Apocalypse are here. And the prophecy of the elite ruling the world has also come to pass. And in this one world with a new pharaoh, dividing itself through cells of division and new technologies, the space around each individual will be virtual. And those incoming messages from a new king will devastate the world as the Antichrist appears for the battle over mankind’s future.

“The pattern here is repeated in how Jesus perished at the hands of the Romans. The Pharisees were united in their pursuit of a glorious empire. And in the time when the Jewish faith was dominated by the belief in King David, the Messiah was not understood.

“The fruits of this life pattern and death are upon you. And the belief in his patterns of life is the perspective of the limited knowledge of your mind. You will see events occur, and you will believe in the messages we send, as they feel so familiar to you that you see your instincts as signs from the heart. And the beliefs that you share will convince others to look into the gospels and question what it is that they believe.

“For in the hour at hand, the facts will be acknowledged as fate. And in the heart, the creation story will occur, as you begin your rise to be a king in the land. And your leadership can help the people understand and prepare for the return of the Messiah. In the mourning over the death of those who have been slaughtered in this world, from every religion, the world can begin to think of a unified future. And so, the

reaction to your position as a member of the line of Judah should be one of heart to mind.

“Author, for this position that you believe yourself to hold, the enemy will try to sneak his narrative of the mastery of the world into you by embedding the darkness in the light. And in the final assault on religious institutions in the world, to distance the pharaoh from a unifying collective of religions that I will call a church, the ruling elite will take drastic measures to try to compel this church to splinter or break.

“Author, the trial of the Morning Star will be upon the land when the trumpets blow. The ram is to be led to slaughter. And the ram will have a thousand eyes, as he carries many of those praying with him onto the battlefield. The conversations of evil and good will ultimately begin with evil taking a forceful stance over who can stay in place, and who will have to leave the place where they reside. And in dreadful perceptions of this plan to control the chaos and the plagues the horsemen will bring, they will enact powers to convene in a darkened sphere of knowledge.

“Their thoughts of darkness will breed plans to eliminate all religions and bring what they see as order, but which is really just a new, technologically savvy worldview. One where all the world is forced into a system operating with alien technology focused on them. Author, this worldview is not of an older religion where I am the Father.

“The world has faltered, and they use the media as information channels to pressure people into adopting ideas and worldviews. The elite will push the idea of a new ruler and kingdom, and they will justify their use of force by claiming that it will prevent war from occurring. For they will control

the resources, and their decisions on allocation of those resources will depend on who is willing to support them.

“This should explain a lot about the wars experienced up to this point in human history. They were largely about resources. And largely, the ideals involved were regarding the ruling elite gaining power. By using the plagues in the world to motivate people to act without mercy, the Antichrist will easily control the decisions made to further a worldview.

“And those who foster peace through religious idealism will be questioned and kept from power. The threat of a religious order undermines the Morning Star’s plans of conquest in the world. And so, it will be that the oppression of the religious, and therefore, for those who live their lives through the heart, will get much worse.”

Chapter Thirty-One

Evil within the Community Heart's Upper Masculine Chamber

“Author, there is the lamb who has spoken of the Messiah. This lamb with horns has been slaughtered by his Father in Heaven so that peace may exist. And the act of acceptance of a thousand members of the heavens into his body is symbolic, in that the heavens walk in all tribes of the earth, and they are together in unison in the new faith. And there was also a unification of all the evil that was adverse to the lamb, through which there is social pressure to adapt the Son’s story into a living and breathing legacy once more.

“And through that spirit of the Lord Christ and the elders who surround the throne in the new city of Jerusalem, that eventuality will occur. This outcome was created at the time of the death and resurrection of Jesus, to bridge into the heavens. He was the body and blood of the covenant between the church and the Heavenly Father of Mercy. And in Paradise, each person will meet the begotten Son, who will reintroduce himself on our Earth once more, as Messiah.”

God the Father Almighty said, “Author, through the Holy Ghost, you felt the heavens guide you. You are to accept that the divine beings from the heavenly realm guided you through Hell. The fallen angels come to the earth and search for darkened hearts, just as the worms come up to the earth to find food. And all humanity will be warned that the evil in their lives, from their youth to this present moment, is

about to surface. This is just as the day of the incrimination of Jesus Christ in the Holy Land.

“The judgment then is for Jesus, as Messiah once more, to allow evil to live upon the earth. And the plagues that people will endure will be his humiliation. The cross we bear now is the bridge being built of good faith to walk with him in his death and resurrection. And for the hellfire that you endured while living in that sacrifice of the ram, you will know how that bridge that tunnels toward the heavens in the heart will remain heavenly while becoming earthly.

“It is by the communion of the bread of life that the living Christ takes his place in the throne room of the new Jerusalem. And the trumpets of the angels, which will be heard first in the universes, will ring true.”

The Heavenly Father then said, “Angels will guide you as they fight alongside you. The experience of using your mind first and heart second will surprise you now. You have passed the trial of the Morning Star and will have success in standing against the evil chaos of the world with those heavenly angels.

“Members of your ancestry fought their own sinfulness in trials of judgment through the Christ and Savior. Your lineage explains the perception of yourself as a leader in this war. And the heavenly angels that lead you, who you hear in your heart, will be of a fact no one will understand through the senses. A bridge will be actualized for the war of Hell on Earth, and the cubes of three-dimensional space will warp toward this bridge. And we will see a glorious transformation as our universes turn from dark to light. It will be just as when a person goes from the extremes of light to dark and

dark to light. This breath of Jesus Christ will make his presence real to the alien worshipping self-idolaters.

“Author, I believe that your conscious attempt to understand the spiritual bridge between the purgatory you feel now and the heavens is sincere. Because Jesus already walked this path in his mind and heart as well. And in its journey to believe in the garden of Eden as the place where Adam and Eve fell, humanity will resurface as well. And the garden will have an everlasting effect on the Morning Star as a new dawn emerges.

“Author, the Morning Star is the collection of fallen angels, grouped as one within the summation of all evil. And at the end of the actualized tunnel, where the darkness returns to the light, is a horizon where the evil is burnt up. And in that way, those of a purer form reenter into Heaven.

“Author, the ark that was Jesus Christ’s body and blood provides a form of worship. And as such, all who understand his spiritual light through the heavens will be saved. Now I will tell you about the impending war and judgment of the Morning Star.”

The Father said, “The Holy Ghost is one in which all voices sing the same song of wisdom. And the Messiah leads that choir, creating a song from his soul. Therefore, the Spirit of the Lord knows who is involved in this spiritual ensemble. And they are the ones who hear about impending events of evil in the world from their intuitive hearts. They fall to submission to the Holy Ghost and carry out acts for their Lord.

“Author, the Messiah is the one who loves all people. And by accepting their sinfulness, he has been given the authority to judge their accounts. He examines their living sto-

ries, found in their universal records, which I keep in my right hand. And during the trial of their sinfulness, those points of intervention are examined, where the fallen souls learned of their angels and still chose evil as their purpose. In those moments of awareness, where they are told through their own intuition to keep the glory of his goodness alive, they should have let the Savior win their battles for them. But instead, they fought with themselves and therefore others to put pressure on the world.

“Author, there are many more outcomes than mere social pressure that the evil-minded people describe in their accounts of acts against humanity. And they will fall to their knees or try to hide their faults. And through their line of ancestry, the demons will begin to show those people to themselves. With their consciousnesses illuminated, they will see the demonic forces at work within.

“And they, who have slaughtered the lambs that were in Jesus’s church, will announce their grave sins. But the light will begin to emerge victorious as the hearts of a few may change into Heaven-sent angels once more. And in this fight, where the Holy Ghost will win over more people to support the Messiah’s return, they will exercise their own demons through acts of faith.

“Author, their acts of repentance will alarm Lucifer. And the actualization of losing his war against humanity will bring great embarrassment to those who fought for him.

“If there were two sides to the separation of church and state, mass repentance would drive them together. For it is that humanity will lose fear as the beast’s army fails it. And those fallen angels, who target the people whose darkened

hearts beat, will now understand the outcome of the Lord Christ's days in Hell before his resurrection into Heaven. Although the beast slew the Lord's people on Earth during that time, the outcome of it was and is and ever will be a sign that his time in Hell was not in vain. And as the demonic people, who fight amongst themselves, announce the transgressions against the Messiah and his people, they will return to the beast in Hell. And his power will grow in massive, darkened energy.

"The crucifixion of Christ occurred where Golgotha now stands, near Egypt. And in that soil to which the Lord Christ's spirit returned, through the gravity of the earth and back toward the heavens, will the gravitational field flip on its own. And in that field of massive upheaval, the attraction from the tunnel or bridge between the earth and that spiritual existence will be very strong.

"Author, the beast is an anomaly to solve. It will be left outside the ring of the horizon on Earth, as the gravity of the heavens exceeds its own self. And therefore, the flip of the heavens and universes will occur, and the darkened cube that was a prison to each projected spirit in the universes will become lightened. And the lightened sphere of the collective wisdom of evil intent will then be shuttered, as the only remaining evil will be left as a single dark sphere. And the Morning Star will stay behind on the earth, separated by the waters of the universes, which will redirect itself back to the heavenly garden.

"Each soul projected into the universes to face the collective wisdom of humanity will flip themselves to embrace a

holier existence of the garden once more and stare off at the Morning Star, far away on the surface of the earth.

“The trumpets will blare, and the heavenly angels will fight off any fallen ones who have disobeyed their covenant with the heavens. And the hearts of those who have everlasting life will taste of the fruit of the Tree of Life. And beneath the Tree of Life is where they will meet their Messiah.

“Author, the Morning Star is an anomaly who wants to try to overthrow the heavens once more. And he is on trial for the sake of humanity to end its wars and forgive itself. However, the plagues, which were a realization of the promises of the devil, are insufficient to deliver the end vision the Morning Star idealized. And the people who were greedy and lustful, they will wait to enter their home in the garden of everlasting goodness.

“The war against the universe will begin as an angel sounds another trumpet. And Mary, mother of all the children in the world, will walk to the end of that tunnel that connects everlasting life and death, and speak out to the beast, with all her honesty and compassion. And the stars that were stable in the universes will fall into the tunnel, and slowly, the energy of the heavens will guide itself back to being whole and unified.

“At that event, in which the horizon only expands, the separated state will grow into a party of just evil, which will attempt to overcome any additional plagues. Meanwhile the angels will fight off the demons at that gate between Heaven and Hell. And the mighty, heavenly angels, including Michael, will throw the fallen angels down to the Morning Star, only to collapse it even more with its own darkened

energy, so that the collapsed singularity that once was an anomaly could be solved before the throne room of Jesus Christ.

“In the new city of Jerusalem the garden will become whole once more, and the universes will have little purpose to exist. And the muzzled Morning Star will be given a chance to redeem himself.”

Chapter Thirty-Two

Evil within the Community Heart's Lower Masculine Chamber

The game that Lucifer had played on the three-dimensional checkerboard of the universes ceased to exist. All that it was and had ever condoned through its hypnotized game pieces had been realized. And the lunatics who followed the Morning Star's collective mindset were now a massive story, which Lucifer recited to himself.

And in his heart, Azrael felt his own rocky, barren soil that had no plants in the garden. And Azrael stood alone and waited, not just to understand his own story, but to feel his death taken out of his heart. And in the graveyard of bones of that soil, Jesus began to speak.

"Of the twins who were of the Morning Star, I will address this trial first. The anomaly that caused the pain and suffering in the lives of Adam and Eve's children is remedied. And for those who wept for those children and fought against the devil to the end, you will have my sign on your crowns, and your escape from Hell to Heaven will please me. For the men and women who served me as their messiah will receive my grace. And with my hand, I will collect all those efforts and weigh them on the scale as my anger. And the justification of the world's hate will be weighed as death for these two original fallen angels."

And Jesus, whose spiritual light shone like the radiant sun from around his crown, carried two books. And the first

book was of all the plagues that mankind suffered through the reactions from the Morning Star. And through those plagues of war, famine, death, and pestilence, the leaders, who the Morning Star chose as game pieces, had intended great harm from within their own minds, and so they wailed and gnashed their teeth. And even the men and women who had fallen into lunacy began to fear their own judgment. And for their evil efforts, they were to be cast into a clay fire and doubled in their torments.

And the second book, which Jesus held in his other hand, was a text of the living hearts. And from within, Jesus's chest thumped as the earth quaked and thunder rolled throughout the earth. And for Azrael, the universe was still in its first death and on trial.

And Jesus said, "Of all the works within this second book of life, you will understand my judgment. For it is through this church that I show how life is to be lived. And in ignorance of my spirit, you lack any pity for your transgressions. For you harbored your greatest political order, a horde of wicked servants who did your bidding throughout the nations of the earth. And that political order worked toward separating the state from my church.

"So it is, that those transgressions of the ruling elite and fallen angels will mean that they will suffer at my hand twofold. And the conquest of her story, my planets and all the universes, will be of the knowledge of Babylon.

"You, Lucifer and Azrael, who fell from the garden and comprised Satan first, will now hear my judgement. Your greed and the cruelty you elicited from your elite rulers, that will contribute to your lunacy. And for contributing to the

heart of lust and immorality from those who wage war on my church, you will have everlasting death a second time.

“Into a lake of fire, your suffering souls will perish today. For the determination of your trial is lust, greed, and immorality. And, like you, those others who perish will understand what a second death feels like, to burn in sulfur and brimstone without me in their lives.

“For it was that the political order was your ideal. And it failed the earth. And for each of those souls who gnash their teeth and wage war with me still, you will not be able to calm and repent over them. For your mouth will be muzzled, Satan, and you shall be bound for a thousand years.”

And Jesus, who was to be the great king and forever is the greatest gift that the earth ever knew, spoke once more. “I will always have a hand in your judgment. And in that judgment over what it is to extinguish the universes, I will let you, Satan, loose once more. And in reflecting over the sins of humanity, you will exalt my goodness, as I have accepted myself as a Morning Star of redemption. And my church, which will be the house of many men and women in this garden of Paradise, will see my spiritual light as natural.

“The light that feeds all men and women, plants, birds, and beasts, will overwhelm all who come into my vicinity. And those living in my city will fear nothing more. For it is that the world will harmonize once more under my light, love, and laughter.

“And in that judgment, I will let the birds and beasts once more feast on the evil ones who still fear my judgment. For it will be that they hide from my love, light, and laughter in the fiery pit that they are captives within. And they love

that pit because it is their house. And I will come as a thief in the night on the earth and bring my retribution in one last hour. For it is that those remaining in evil will perish in accordance of Babylon's ideal."

And He turned to me and said in a low and quiet tone, "This is the day of Armageddon. And for whom this judgment comes will have Azrael's second death. For he will perish with them. And their ideals and idolatry, for which greed and lust were foundational, will serve no master anymore. For it will be that the lunatics who have nothing of God anymore, will be slain. This will be just as they had done to my beloved prophets, saints, and martyrs. This will be my vengeance.

"And Lucifer will be left as the Man of Time, in all the wisdom revealed to me. And in this last kingdom of mine, for which all who served the beast are now repenting, can be forgiven.

"For it is that the Word of God, my living body, can be resurrected in full. The bones of all men and women who were listed and named in the book of life can be found once more in the garden of Eden. And they may eat of my body and drink of my blood once more in communion with my soul.

"And in my final hour, Satan, who was a beast and is now a prophet of doom, will be exercised. For Lucifer will walk into that pit of hellfire and torment. And all those who repent during those thousand years will be attracted back to the garden as well.

"And I will reign as king. I will finalize my creation story. For it is with my children of a single and unified church that

I will live once more. And my truth will become trust, as the anomaly is fixed. The repentance will bring rejoicing. And my love for all children will be felt.

“The angels who had worshipped me and my Father will be one in spirit once more. And that fountain that is before my throne room, will be my splendor – a crystallization of that moment when men and women were created in the universe. And all who adore me will walk in trepidation of ever looking into a reflection once more to see themselves as being greater than my Father.

“The crystalline waters will not hold the devil, for I am the Morning Star. I became one in spirit with all who repented for their evil ways against my love. And in that time, I become the husband to my church once more.

“The angels will announce this as a wedding day. This marriage between all who had been slaughtered and who received my love in testimony to live with me already, will be at my dinner table. And they will sit on either side of my left and right hand. For in that hour before, where my judgment was supreme, they fought for me and believed my word as a living account. And they served to strike fear into the darkness with my Holy Ghost. The light of my Spirit then came down and brought my children back into the new Jerusalem.

“And this city, made of all sorts of crystalline structures, would be a spiritual home. For the memory of all things lives under the waters of the universes that are as crystalline as my footstool. And the new Jerusalem is not of physical structure in total, but of a home to be recognized as my body and heart.

“The city of the new Jerusalem will have no end. No curses will be found in my love. I will no longer give life to anything that deserves suffering and death. For our love in Heaven is unified in my heart.

“Author, you have welcomed my love, light, and laughter into your heart. And your embrace of my Spirit within you will overwhelm your senses. And in opposition to what lunacy was for you on this earth, you will feel my presence as fulfillment. For it is that my love and strength carried you as you walked with my spirit, the Holy Spirit, through Hell once more. And in your lifetime, when I gave you the Morning Star to redeem all humanity through, you would acknowledge your own presence and my identity. For you were a lamb with horns to be slaughtered. And in all anger and resentment for that life, where the people attacked you for your innocence, you stayed powerfully mine.

“Author, this act of grace I give to you is to absolve you and release you into that crystalline lake of Heaven now. And your spirit will rise above it in my throne room. And you will not falter as you walk on that water that is the night.

“For you are in my love. And I will claim your body through a communion of my own. You will see my fiery eyes as you saw them before in your background, staring into the earth from the heavens. And your fiery father, who has passed, and who has been guiding you through the Holy Spirit, will answer to me. For his beloved Father in Heaven will answer to his anomaly next. You see, your own father, who lived and breathed with you on the earth before this time, will slowly begin to unravel what deeds he has done

as time will begin to resurrect the dead in the new city of Jerusalem.

“The patterns that we call karma are not the end-all of faith. And my judgment, which will come as the fruition of the trial of the Morning Star, will be a surrender to all who love me and live my testimony. From your roots of the line of David, and my House of Judah, I rule in everything, all everlasting, within the domain of the spiritual light and natural light.”

And the Father of all Heaven gave me His final instructions. He, within that love of Jesus Christ, was the head of Heaven. And in the love of Jesus Christ, I felt the Father. His creation of the new Jerusalem, He explained to me, was the final covenant.

“Author, that is all that is required to write of this trial of the Morning Star. His idolatry, lust, and immorality were his downfall. In life, it is materialism, greed, lust, and self-servitude that lead the wicked ways of a ruling people. And in the name of all things unholy, you can feel stubborn to live in Christ’s testimony. For his Gospel is the avenue through which we acknowledge our sinfulness. And it is in his Word, that we love him.

“The time will slowly begin to come back toward the positive from the negative. And what is real will be felt from the imaginary. From fiction to fact, this covenant will be felt. That is, in the mind to the heart, it will flip onto itself. And when the heart opens to Jesus Christ’s promise of his holy city, the new Jerusalem, the mind will become in line with peace.

“This land of Heaven will exist until it is of a mindset that matches the heart of Jesus Christ. And that morning of a new dawn in Heaven will be my recollection of wisdom as promised to Adam.

“And Eve’s children will have my love and thoughtfulness. Not in equality of their Heavenly Father, but in appreciation of all things created for them.

“Do nothing more in this work until you are moved to do so. It is a penance in itself to witness such miracles and healing in the world. And this story will move the nations toward peace. And in that healing, where the universes will converge into a single point in the hellfire, it will erupt into an end of all evil.”

Section Five

Revelatory (=,=)

Chapter Thirty-Three

The Holy Ghost then continued to talk to me through its little flame of spiritual greatness within my soul. "Author, there is a quality of great spirituality in this heavenly garden. And that garden which Jesus walked through in Hell, and therefore, you did so with him, is for its own knowledge, but that experience you have will serve you now to identify how the devils around you can be thought of as anomalies. These shadow devils walk through your world and partake in the spiritual reckoning before Jesus Christ in your heart.

"The anomalies that present themselves in the garden of Heaven are, in fact, outsiders. They do not belong in the heavenly garden because they are without a crown of thorns on their consciousness. They walk with attempts to control. And in that age where, on Earth, Judah's tribe was hurt by being subservient to Romanesque laws, under which property ownership was an individual right. But the Jewish people refrained from a liberating idealism between, within, and next to God.

"You should understand that the shadows of humankind were fought within the mind. And when it was decided that individual freedom was increased by having ownership of all aspects of the environment, secularism began to rise.

"The heart of this law, the rules that dominate in human existence, at least for those whose systems of law resemble the Roman Empire, begin to take on a savage approach that would doom the worldly population. The women gloated in their hearts over their godlike power, while the men stepped

into a role of immortality due to their own legendary views of themselves.

“They were kings and queens on the earth with notions of self-grandeur. And, due to the economic rules, they lied to people across the planet about which resources were taken and held as property.

“Author, these devils who continue to find their way toward the heavenly garden through different measures must be made aware of the difficult terms of our life standards. We look to Jesus Christ as the measure of goodness. And through those relationships in which we are an extension of his love, we offer respect and belongingness. That means that the way God is shown through our thoughts is not merely to present a logical analysis of who owns what thing we compete for, but to exercise a culture where all feel an interconnected synchronicity of pain and pleasure. This reduces the role of the mind in awareness and allows the heart to own itself, as part of a system in which God had a creation story for Adam.

“So, in this garden of harmonies, where all things grow and wilt together through the seasons, we cast out such devilish ideas as resource ownership. For plants have been given life so they might support the growth of other life. They are not mere resources. And it is in the interconnectedness of all things, known as the web of life, that seasons take hold of facts. Culture is built of the facts people perceive to understand how to live life.

“Therefore, Author, we will go to the devil himself, as he has been muzzled and constrained, to teach him the principles of the garden in Heaven, and to help others determine

which system they would prefer to live within. For it is that the anomaly that is Lucifer will have a second death in the lake of fire. And those who understand our principles of the kingdom of Heaven on Earth, which will be known as the new Jerusalem, will have a good idea of what life is like, as humankind was meant to experience it.

“Now taste of the Tree of Life. Take the fruit of this tree that you have sat upon, and taste its reassurances. That life is made from the spiritual light turned flesh. And in your soul, you will feel invigorated, though it will take effect through the heart of your physical body. And through a miraculous event, as you digest that food in your physical body through my spirit, you will feel a shift in your thought patterns.

“Author, the realization of your spirit in Heaven will guide you toward new avenues and pathways of inspired ideation. Following those pathways will reveal interconnected thoughts that will remove the shadow devils’ reluctance of belief and bring the light of Jesus into your interpersonal relationships and communication. For your spirit will be strengthened, and the magnetism of your heart will interact with the planets and suns. And all that is, and that will be, and that was forever ago made to age in death, will be brought together in wholeness. The shadow devils, which were the anti-personalities of people in the past who argued against these ideas, will be influenced by your magnetized spirit and your tongue.

“Author, these ideas are not new to Lucifer. And he will refute your ideas of denouncing ownership of resources as a privilege of mankind. But do not be afraid of being persecuted for Jesus Christ. For it is through this pursuit that you will

bring redemption to many people through his love as you help him to regain his heavenly throne.”

The Holy Ghost continued, “Author, the mind is currently your primary focus, and it is of a darkened sphere. From the heavenly gate beyond the filament above the waters, we have shown you the universes below. And that knowledge about what was celebrated as a privilege and human freedom, to include the optimal approach to ownership in life, now will be resolved. For the spiritual darkness under the waters of Heaven has created a block. This block is like a knot that cannot be untied through any means other than the belief in Christ.

“Although it is ignored by or unknown to many, the spiritual light of Jesus Christ shines through all. But the spiritual light that is in the heart and mind comes before us in the garden. It will come in an age when all things are acknowledged as being unified. And the Father to all has power throughout all beliefs. This is the culture that we aim to offer to you, Author. By learning how the anomalies were created and have returned, you will begin to understand how refuting them will help in the realization of the heavenly garden.”

The Holy Father then appeared to me before the Tree of Life in the garden of Eden. And in that moment, this glorious place, where all things spiritual and natural were inverted and mirrored from how I had known them on Earth, became real. For it was that I was in harmony with the surroundings through my admiration and His compassionate love. I felt that the plants were producing signs for me to interpret in addition to what the Father had to say. The animals in the garden were harvesting their food as well, and

they were merry in how they walked, flew, or swam through Paradise.

The Holy Father said, "What Satan had been, and what he has done, is in opposition to my spiritual life. And, as I have inverted the world and its systems to their opposite to bring you into Heaven, you shall discuss the world you see with Lucifer first. For it is that the opposition of everything in chaos is now in order; therefore, he should be aware of these interconnected harmonies and understand how things in Paradise communicate through compassion.

"Do you understand how everything that was on the earth can be here as well? Yet, the evil is left behind, in the minds of men and women. Those people followed the serpent through Adam and Eve. And now they understand how good their God is. For I am the love you sought. And in the unification of all light, I will be here for you in love.

"Author, the interconnectedness of things that weaves itself through my love is no longer time-bound. And what is in my Heaven is woven through me. So, I offer you my guidance on how to manage your instincts. And in your mind, you will no longer have knots of pain that keep you spiritually blocked. Your mind will be clear to understand the organization of all things, through which I will guide you.

"The respect in which the plants nourish all and the related animation of all life are the signs that all things are woven together. For my light is in all things. And that belongingness to life in the garden will be of me. Take time to understand what my love is first. It does not conquer the heart, but is freely given away, in recognition that I will always be with you to nourish your light.

“And know that I do not take ownership. Nor does my son. When Jesus is in communion with all things, he is in their hearts. Through our love, all things living are animated, and we breathe together through the heart and body. So you see, that tapestry of life depends on the nourishment and communication of Jesus Christ’s loving body as well. But all things do not live through his heart alone. I am and will be with you through the Holy Spirit as well. And in my love, light, and laughter, the Holy Spirit will travel to speak effectively with all as I move throughout all living things.

“Author, I am not the center of the garden. I am everything and everywhere, in all times. And you will go now to discuss this first with Lucifer, so that he and his earthly followers may know my stance here.”

And in a cave that was being used as a tomb, I was moved to speak into the darkness. I felt the presence of Lucifer, whose mind was in the devil. He was bound, and his mouth was muzzled so as not to affect us in the garden. And as I stepped closer to him, I felt his hatred and repulsion grow around me, and inside me.

I said to him, “I will speak of the interconnectedness of all things and the spiritual ties woven throughout the heavenly garden. For you have forgotten your identity before, while you were in the physical world, in that dimly lit love that was almost nothing. But then Jesus came to bring a revelatory homecoming for you.

“Would you, Lucifer, understand where it is that we exist now? That the reflective waters are above that filament of the universes? And that filament that was your fall was the greatest thread of all known space and time, warped toward

the universes? During that fall from here, there was a change in your orientation, and so you brought a change in orientation to the world, inverting people's minds and hearts so they would stay isolated."

Lucifer looked off into the distance. He appeared to be somewhat alert, as if he were either just waking or being sedated. But his anger rippled throughout the surroundings, as if it were responding to what I had said. I felt that the anger was acknowledging me.

Lucifer could not remove his muzzle, but I received a message that I perceived as this: "Author, I am Lucifer, the king of everything under the seas of the universe. And I am honored, but I will attest that, in my concentration on my own greatness, I have forgotten the feeling and value of being in this holy garden. I have brought much pain into the world, through which the collective mindset was dominant, and actions were taken in furtherance of my complexity and chaos.

"Author, do I deserve to be brought back to this garden and received by my Father? I think not. And I do not know why I hear you still, as you have moved past my lies and temptations."

Then I perceived a string of lies and curses being spat out toward me as Lucifer tried to tempt me into removing his muzzle and binding. And among those lies, I understood my loved ones on Earth to be in pain and torture, asking for a way out of the darkness. The lies, or rather, the misconception they caused, made me want to move, in spirit, to help Lucifer by freeing him. For he felt that I would overrule

God's will to save my loved ones, despite knowing that He has love for all things here in the garden.

Lucifer sent more misguiding thoughts to me. "Author, you are able to free me and save your friends and family. And if you take that opportunity, I shall offer great freedom to you as well."

And in that moment, I understood where the conversation was heading. Lucifer, still bound and muzzled, was trying to gain his freedom by refuting the story I offered of his downfall with a plea to my heart and through my mind. His message took what I said and inverted it and mirrored it back into himself.

And I said, "Lucifer, I wanted to share with you how you work in darkness. Throughout the galaxies and planets, you admired yourself and exercised the freedom of possessing other life. But that control, which you offer to me now, would bring the same downfall to me that you had, if I refute what is truth. You have a great wisdom of pain and suffering that you used upon those other lifeforms. And for this, you will realize your worth."

And I walked away from Lucifer and the cave that was his tomb. And in that acknowledgment that I could withstand his temptation and deceit, I felt secure in the totality of Jesus Christ's communion with all things in the garden of Paradise.

Chapter Thirty-Four

I returned to the Holy Father in His garden. And deep down, I knew He had given the garden to Adam to seed and protect it. But in that acknowledgment, I felt the Lord Christ's spirit cautioning me to be wary of asking God for that same favor. So, I held onto that feeling of caution, and I reflected upon all things interwoven and belonging to the whole, a process where I could intervene while not asserting too much influence on God's creation story.

As I walked to the Holy Father, somewhat confused over what occurred with Lucifer's refutation and preoccupied about my own command to till the soil of the garden of Paradise, God spoke to me. "Author, there is nowhere in this day that needs you or the plants or the waters or anything more than what is. The plants communicate and talk with one another. As does that water that laps across the grounds. And the animals use their own bodies to talk in ways you cannot yet imagine. The purpose of discussing all of this is so that you will learn to listen. You will not guard the garden yet, as you do not know their languages.

"The animals speak to the plants through the spirit. In communion with all living things, they can understand their own languages and other languages. So it is that the harmony of love is of respect. And as you begin to hold that respect, there will be an adaptation in your thoughts and the ideas you present, and you will learn new ideas from the plants and animals. You will become in symbiosis with the web of life once more. And Author, that is what I expect from you – to

listen to all things that are interconnected, and to listen to my Holy Ghost and wait for my Word as well.

“Here in the garden of Paradise, you will find new opportunities to live within that order. And as you continue to work in this paradise, you will feel more of me in your mind. For it is that the loving environment in which and with which you feel and speak will challenge the refutations of Lucifer from before. And that which I teach you about advancing your outlook of symmetry through a dependence on the soil, you will teach to Lucifer.”

The Holy Father then reiterated that not all that is imagined is reality. And that the fiction and facts from the mind to the heart do not work in his Word. “Author, there is a hatred seated deep in humanity. And in that hatred is self-loathing. If there is a self-fulfilling prophecy to understand, it is this: people will focus on their hatred to understand the darkness, and Satan will respond to them through that darkness. Now, in that darkness remains a power from when Satan was on the earth. And, as some people are still on the earth, while Lucifer is bound; therefore, you will understand both the positive and negative sides of life, while you are here in my garden of Paradise.

“Author, while you adjust to the languages of the living systems in the garden, you will come to appreciate the positive and negative aspects of both Heaven and Earth. First, it is important to understand that negativity is not equated to evil, just as positivity is not equated to good. They simply allow the balance my equilibrium seeks to obtain.

“Now listen, but preserve your curiosity about these. Equilibrium is fostered through understanding. For exam-

ple, what is animate versus what is inanimate. And in those languages of all things living, give them their appreciation and respect for being connected as part of the web of life. This would even include the animated forces of water on, under, and surrounding the lands. These are teeming with life and are therefore part of the interconnectedness of life. And the inanimate things that are made by divine command or through living imagination, these connect to the web of life as well, as they form the stones on the paths we walk and the tools with which we tend the garden.

“Therefore, Author, I want you to listen and describe those forces animated as living in terms of action. And for all things inanimate, you can describe as yours. And by doing this, you will understand my balance. And may that spill over into your understanding of the languages.

“Author, your patterns now are of seeking and maintaining control. You speak about ownership and possession of things, people, and the land. You frequently say, ‘I want,’ or ‘I have.’ And all things are related back to the center of your existence, due to your limited viewpoint. You experienced a painful mindset of anger and frustration. This is a pain which has been focused on by many people across the span of humanity. But seeking the logic of that pain has provided the primary motivation to understand other people.

“You began by considering the people in relationships with you and those in your surroundings. For some, the contrast with you was evident, since you were out of balance with the harmony of nature. The negativity that you experienced at their hands was of an evil source at times, particularly when they wanted to manipulate you. And other times,

the logic behind their actions was just to prove themselves correct while looking down on other people.

“However, the positive aspects of your life kept you in the heart. You chose between meeting that logic or staying humble before the Holy Spirit. And in those moments, you sought balance between your world and mine in Heaven.

“Since that mindset has inverted and mirrored back on itself now, you can understand the balance in my Heaven. And you will talk with Lucifer to help the people still on the earth, the ones kept in his pit, to understand why they harbored self-loathing and anger.

“Author, the negative effects of self-loathing go beyond the individual who experiences it and those surrounding them in their lifetime. All who are affected bring the negative energy into the heavenly garden from these anomalies. These dark forces are the bases of energy of the demons that want to be freed from the hellish pit of the beast.

“Author, you must meet them when you talk to Lucifer to discuss his anger with him. But be cautious, as Lucifer still has the power to lull you into a reflective moment, where he can then mesmerize you into temptation to hate as well. If you begin to feel like hate is rising within yourself and you cannot sustain a healthy balance, then you must leave that conversation immediately.”

So it was that the Heavenly Father allowed me to listen in the garden for a bit longer before asking Lucifer to talk once more. And in all that was alive around me, I realized that life was teeming with both logic and creativity. However, the logic was of a negative energy, and the creativity was of a positive energy.

And it made sense to me then why logic was so under-represented on Earth. It was because our rules governing everything had to be balanced with the creative aspects of everything. And in that moment, where I listened to the heavenly garden and saw how everything together formed the tapestry of life, I realized that my own logic was dominant to my own space. The landscape of my narrow views was often reinforcing of my own patterns. And that logic was then to place myself first, and second, and however else I could benefit in respect to those patterns, only to keep reinforcing that which I wanted to understand in life.

So, I went to Lucifer, still bound and muzzled. And I spoke to him. Lucifer announced to me through his darkened energy that I was not welcomed back. He said, "If you want to discuss something, then take off my muzzle and untie these knots. I will only talk to you if you free me.

"Mastery over a vision is what I will accept. And I will complete all ends of this vision. For that is my logical conclusion. And I will not accept anything more of you or of Heaven.

"I will discuss nothing of the gates of Heaven or the filament above the waters. For the gates are but an opening through which communion with Jesus might occur. It is through that communion that all that are animated receive the spark of life. And he who is alive, is now dead to me."

And the dark energy overtook the beast in Lucifer, as he writhed in hatred.

In listening to Lucifer describe his own vision, I could see his patterns of hatred. And I saw that his control over ideas and people, including me in our conversation, had

boundaries that he himself had imposed. He contained his anger and focused his hatred to understand his own cursed worldview. That perspective was a logic that undermined all of the circumstances surrounding him, including the love of Jesus, within, around, and next to him.

So I asked, "Lucifer, would you listen to me and share why this anger and frustration is important to you? Because I am beginning to hate you. And in this mutual hatred is an anger that binds us both. That anger inside you, it is a cursed shadow in me. And in social settings, where the shadows of devils jump between hearts in such curses, I feel your muzzle is best kept on, and your binding kept tight."

Lucifer stopped writhing for a moment, as it seemed his only question had been answered. He knew that I was not going to let him out of his binding. So instead, he played a game. He said, "Author, the temptations were just a game of creativity. By controlling the mindsets of peoples around me, I warped their thoughts together to advance something I condoned. I put pressure on people and hurt their feelings, at a minimum, only to get results. My joy then was to displace their intentions and keep my dominance over them."

I thought to myself about how much he treated people like possessions, and I began to turn away from the conversation. I looked at the garden and all the beauty around us. And focusing on that respect and the belongingness of all things, as in the Father's creation plan, I sat and listened. For I was unaware of what to say to Lucifer, or the souls in his hellish body and pit.

And there was something very small that intrigued me. A sound that came from a blooming flower. In that moment,

I understood that it required to have pollen taken from its petals. And through its scent, it asked on the winds to have a bee join in the discussion, and welcomed it to carry its seed into the garden to spread life.

And, as I looked back at the beast in Lucifer, I said to myself that I should acknowledge the needs of the Father to redeem as many of those souls who need His love within their lives.

I said, "Lucifer, I understand you hated me for loving Jesus. And that everything I said and did in his name was a source of frustration to your vision for me. As the love I shared was to be multiplied in laughter, and a foil to your control of others' frustration.

"The logic of your vision has been inverted and mirrored back. And yet, you start there to understand your projections of self onto the universe. But all things should end there, not begin there."

So I concluded my communication with him by announcing this idea to the souls who were begging for forgiveness and release from the twisted logic and mind games: "The Creator is the source of all that is good and holy. And when you use these games of creativity to laugh at and persecute those who are members of His unified church, you cause frustration and anger and hate for all with your curses. However, for all the fallen, you have a second death waiting for you. And in that death from your earth into abysmal torments, a lake of fire will keep you forever.

"So it is that the Heavenly Father is the Alpha and Omega, His Son, the light of redemption, and the Holy

Spirit is the transporter of ideas in that mindset and from the heart.

“Lucifer, instead of thinking of detailed plans and tricks to escape from your shackles and muzzle, can you use your mind and open yourself up to listening?

“Listen to the ideas that flow throughout this worship. And use that logic, where all things are connected to and communicate with each other, to create abundance together. And now, I will leave this conversation. For you are bound and cuffed in this tomb, but you still have an opportunity to let those in your possession feel the natural sensemaking through which humanity lives with its surroundings once more.”

And so, I walked away from Lucifer and from that cavernous tomb to seek advice from the Lord. At first, I searched for a place in Heaven where I could listen. But then I was guided by the spirits of many to feel connected, like I belonged there. I was no longer an alien in the garden of Paradise. I had witnessed my own self-serving attitudes and logic that tended to be evil through Satan on Earth. That awareness of life around me began a new conversation in my mind. One with the surroundings, and with love for the Holy Trinity.

Chapter Thirty-Five

The Holy Ghost continued to speak to me from within my soul. It passed through everything. The waters were animated to give life to the plants. And the plants passed their messages along to other plants and animals by the wind. And the natural light kept all living things warm.

“Author, you carry a burden within your soul. This was to understand the devil well enough to stay aware of his presence in your lifetime. However, since you have been welcomed back into the garden, there has been a shift in where you belong. The belief system you had involved glorifying the goodness of the spiritual light around a dark environment. The dark environment was polluted and full of evil people who were pretending to do honest work. But they lied to themselves and to their gods within their own stories. Still, you held your ground and our holiest vision against their persecution.

“Author, you were not in the world merely to go through life. Your purpose was to overcome the torment and resolve the anomaly that the devil wrought against you. And though you honored Jesus, it was in part due to your irrational fears about Satan. And he tried to use those fears to thwart your noble quest to break this evil power he had over you. He fed you lies and stories of all the others he had tempted and deceived, for this was his end vision for your life. But you did not break in your pursuit of walking with Jesus.

“Therefore, your heart kept my light, the flame of the Holy Spirit, alive. And your love of all things heavenly led

you to the garden, where you would see the Lord's face once more. He extended his hand to you, as you are already aware. And you spoke to him once more there in the garden.

"Author, there will be a moment in which you will recall all that transpired in your life, including every moment when your feelings were hurt from the social persecution that you faced. And you will let that go. From beyond the universes, the Lord's fiery eyes offered a watchful gaze over you. And in that gaze was more than just the concern of a Father, asking his son to come back to Heaven. It was an appreciation for the passion and commitment it took to thwart the forces of Hell so that he may speak to you once more. And in those words you felt and now receive, you see beyond the new city of Jerusalem, where Jesus is the Messiah."

I looked inward in anticipation of finding his presence through me. Or maybe it was that he was near the Tree of Life? But I could not find the hand that would sweep over all of creation to sway the living and the animated life with his favor. And I wondered where I was to find the Messiah.

I remembered that my background in life had been behind me then. So I figured the inverted and mirror-opposite approach to finding life in the garden of Heaven may be the gate that I was hoping for. I thought of those fiery eyes from before, in my background. And I imagined the fiery eyes of the Lord ahead of me, and inverted. And in that garden, I felt my feet move across a crystalline body of water. Below the waters were the universes, which held a darkness that polluted the vacuum of space and time.

I did not fixate on the pollution, as I felt that might pull me back down into the universe. So instead, I focused on see-

ing the face of the Lord Jesus Christ in front of me, that I might be inverted in my spirit to his understanding. My feet began to walk for me. And I crossed that crystalline body of water that was full of frozen universes, where his hand was. And I climbed up onto his hand without effort.

Jesus carefully brought my soul through the heavenly gates in his hand. These gates were above me before, in my earthly life, and as I have mentioned before, they were accessible from the filament above the waters. And the filament, the entity comprising the largest strands of the universes, wrapped within a thread, bridged the universes into the heavens. However, now the gates were behind me as Jesus carried me above even the gates of Heaven.

He spoke to me as if I were still a physical body on the earth. I felt his words fall on me as if they dropped and mirrored over themselves into my intuitive understanding. I heard the words, "Author, do you remember when I mentioned that I was and forever will be your savior? I know that you have suffered persecution in my name, and this could have broken our love – by other people's lies and deceit. They said you had no love in your life except for embarrassment to yourself. And that you would be alone forever, since you had nothing more than a basic understanding of what the earthly world was really like. They said evil things to break your love for me and keep you from the creation story I intended for you."

I spoke softly, almost to myself, in my heart, in hopes that Jesus would hear my inner dialogue. I thought to myself, "I knew that Jesus would prove them wrong. And that their punishment would be a double portion of their own exact-

ing of Hell; for what they served to me would return back to them in karma.”

Jesus smiled. He was amused. “Author, when the rain falls and life is wet with nourishment, do the plants weep or rejoice?”

I knew that all things that received rain would rejoice. For they needed the water to preserve their lives. But deep inside, I realized that this question was in fact a wake-up call. For the rain that fell from the heavens to the earth was like the words of his that fell upon my soul. And the natural light that had been preserved as a physical shell in that garden became lighter and purer in existence. And I followed the rain upward and mirrored those words around to understand how love existed in everything to nourish his body.

I spoke directly to Jesus now, right into his ear, as there was no need for distance. And a small amount of light radiated from where my heart was, as a shining soul with wings.

The light that was of my soul then said, “It hurt me so much that I almost disconnected from my life to relieve the suffering at the hands of those who persecuted me. And I lost all of my inner joy and nourishment of your love, because the devil was able to use that disconnection from you. From the heavens, I cannot imagine what that might look like to you, Jesus.”

And within my soul were the fiery eyes of Christ. He was showing me what he saw, which was a lake of fire. And within the lake were all those without the nourishment of his love, taken by the devil. And they were grasping for help, trying to climb out of the fire. Other tormented beings kept pulling them back down, as if their lies and deceit would

manifest into something real, just as they breathed some hope into their souls.

I asked Jesus, "Was that where I was during my suicide attempt in life? Was it real that I had to fight for my sanity every day until I saw your angels give me the promise that I was indeed loved through the heavens?"

Jesus inverted and mirrored my existence back to me in my soul, so that the knots of my lifetime could unravel themselves.

And what was under my soul from that hell on Earth became a dragon, reaching into the universal sky. And I looked up at all that was inverted, where all the lies and deceit in my spiritual life were captured, and I saw my own guardian angel speaking out against that dragon. And my guardian angel told the serpent that Jesus had found his lowliest servant who would follow into his kingdom. And he, the savior of all humanity, would keep me close, under his watchful gaze.

While all of this was occurring, the celestial patterns started to move on the right side of me. And I believed that I was being led to be followed. And in the inverted, mirror-like spiritual answer to my earthly life, the animals would sing out to me, in signs from above. And the logic that was of a purer sort, from the Creator to the beasts and birds, was the inverted logic of emotions on my left side. So, the creation, and my free will, were accessed by the Lord through his watchful, fiery eyes.

In my soul, which was radiant and shining with the understanding of how the map of my life story was shaping up, I saw the horrors that humanity suffered from following evil. And all of those evil ideas that were fed to hungry families in

a cursed story of nationalism to stoke war between nations, then conquered my thoughts in an arrangement as large as the sky itself. That evil energy was displaced from an enraged dragon in the lake of fire. And within my mind, my thoughts became fixated on a newfound pattern of worship.

As I reluctantly announced within my soul that all those around me felt that dark and hideous energy and followed its purpose in persecuting me, my instincts grew stronger in spiritual awareness with the Holy Spirit. I was emboldened in spiritual light, within an aura of negative and dark energy. And Jesus came back to me through my heart when I presented these spiritual ideas to him.

The words of love that he brought into my heart were like drops of sweet honeydew, dripping meaning into my soul. His words guided me to love and nourish our relationship and my relationships with other people in my surroundings. He asked me to write stories and guided me through each sentence with his patience.

And when it was time to write about that memory of my sinfulness, when I was part of the lake of fire and detached from anything holy, he gently reminded me that this was my rebirth into the heavens. And that the spiritual light that was gifted to me was a renewed connection to his prophecy.

In radiant form with wings, Jesus said into my soul, "Author, when you were on the earth, you felt like your journey was straightforward, and that is because of my guidance. I continually educated you and encouraged you to develop your intuition and storytelling skills so you would realize your faults. And by realizing your weaknesses, Satan had less power over you through his lies and deceit. And eventually,

you reached the point where you could face the surrounding world with only the knowledge of my love to guide you. And you stood tall and said to the evil that no more would you accept it or give it merit. That the evil people in your surroundings did not appreciate me, your savior. You ignored their words for your practice of praying to me for my harmonies. You sought refuge in the garden at that point, with people you could trust in your lifetime, while still connected to me. And that inspired vision of life without evil, in my kingdom, was this holy city of the new Jerusalem.”

The fiery eyes of the Lord then came back into my soul. And the words that fell from his mouth looked like fire mixed with rain. And the surrounding body that was of Heaven in the form of Jesus, was now of a new type of landscape, where the bubbling brook and mountains were of a new typology. It was no longer of a physical form that was in my mind. I did not interact with the landscape in the same way I had before, where I traversed under my own willpower to walk and feed off the land. It was light. And there was a sun, blazing brightly inside me in that landscape I was a part of. And, of course, another idea was introduced for me to tell, another part of the story that my earthly form was writing – how Heaven is still being manifested.

The co-creation part of Jesus’s story is how adaptable we humans can be. And in the form of pure light, I was to acknowledge how we are birthed back into a breath of life. The rhythm of life and the breath of a body of heavenly descent both elevate as the love in our hearts brings us into a new form. Intuition is not really needed. And I arose from that world. I came up through the crystalline waters within the

heavenly gates at the throne of Jesus. And I whispered to the universes that were of memory something that Jesus had told me to keep secret.

The universes shifted in their celestial order. And I walked into the sunlight in the garden of Paradise. The sunlight was overwhelmingly bright. It was very bright to me spiritually as well. I gathered that the brightness was probably needed to meet the nourishment of all the beasts, birds, and people. It needed to shine brightly for other living things as well, and to maintain the design for the Creator's story.

I let my feet walk for me, as I recognized that I was starting to think in the old ways, where my thoughts were sluggishly inverted and mirrored backward. I tried to keep pace with the celestial understanding that I had just received from Jesus – that I would let my body move, and the most natural disposition of love would occur.

When I came within earshot of that cavernous tomb of Lucifer, I saw that the Tree of Knowledge was close by. I climbed it, and I shouted down into the hellfire. I yelled, "Lucifer, you have never been for me! You have always been against me, trying to keep me from finding the truth in life! But the nourishment of light, both spiritual and natural, was just an awakening for my inner self. I can feel the fluctuations inside my heart and the breath of spiritual rebirth. And now, the wings that were horns on the dragon can be reclaimed. Just as the sound of harmonies can be discussed by the Holy Ghost. In this awareness, I will judge you, Satan!"

I realized that my new awareness, without the limitations of the earthly landscapes, was a mindset that could be

discussed as light with Lucifer. I picked an apple from the Tree of Knowledge and felt its weight. It was heavier than I'd expected. And I saw that the light would soon spark a fire in the tree when Satan was fully cast into that lake of fire. The apple in my hand then spoke to me.

All things were known in that bright light of understanding. The body that was of Jesus then was within and before and around me. There was no physical or limited knowledge.

There was awareness of all things in love. And it began to rain in the garden of Eden.

Chapter Thirty-Six

When I was in the earthly universes, I had imagined what the rain in the heavenly garden would be like. The celestial order was a new form, and the love that spiraled around all the stars in the galaxy took the form of energetic particles in a nebulous shape.

The vacuum that was of space was just a lack of awareness of what material comprised those heavenly skies. And many souls that were broken and collecting information from their senses were projected into both the matter and anti-matter.

The Morning Star, who fell within that darkened energy, was of anti-matter. And through his wisdom came an uprising against Heaven. To his left was the removal of freedom from the angels. And to his right was his end vision – his group of fallen angels who ruled with an iron fist.

And despite all the things that humanity did to learn the truth, they were willing to be deceived. For their objects of lust and greed were of paramount importance to them in their lives. So the human population developed spiritual blocks and grew in asymmetry away from the heavens.

Satan sat in the midst of the lake of fire, which held many tortured souls who wailed and screamed as they gnashed their teeth. For the shadow devils that were of an anti-matter that was a spiritual darkness were sent away from the light. They hid in their embarrassment and self-loathing. And they, those who persecuted the brave and noble-minded people of the church, revealing their own hypocrisy, they felt pity.

EQUILIBRIUM - ACROSS HEAVEN AND HELL 301

The love that was showered from the garden did not quench their hearts, as many of those shadow devils wished for. Instead, the fallen angels that lived to announce their monstrous Morning Star to the world gave them lashes on their bodies, as was done in the persecution of Jesus in his trial.

And those fiery eyes that were now in my winged soul's light became present to these shadow devils. And the doors to their spiritual blocks were encoded as a freedom from the fruit Adam and Eve ate.

In their hearts were the entrances from the doors of the tunnel, leading back to the angelic fount. And in came a rush of holy water upon the surface from above the lake of fire. The gates of Heaven were announced as opened.

And in that tomb, Lucifer sat, thwarted. He showed his binding and muzzle to the fallen angels, creatures, and shadowy devils. And Lucifer, who prized himself more than any other in the universes, showed his fear. That the humiliation and persecution of Jesus Christ was a planned event to take the pieces off the checkerboard of spiritual life and make off with gold pieces.

And the pile of golden treasure upon which the Morning Star sat was in fact a representation of the talents of gold taken from each passionate person fallen to him in his hell pit. And Lucifer looked away, as did the fallen angels, for the spiritual light was far brighter than any star they had ever seen.

The Savior announced, "In my death, I was crucified repeatedly across time from you, Morning Star. And all the evil that you are shall now be judged. For it is that Michael

threw you into the pit of despair and left you locked away in a prison until my judgment of you. And the love that was enough to bring me to life is available for one last moment of time, through Mary. That these gates opened now is of her sacrificial ram.

“He laid his head on the ground of stone and barren earth only to walk with evil once more. And he did guide the sinners away from their own torture through his compassion. That embarrassment given to his own flesh was to make him fearful and run and hide. And yet, you devils are the ones laughing, but only for mere seconds before the lake of fire brings your second and everlasting death.”

And Jesus continued to speak from that heavenly gate above the lake of fire. He said in words that floated on the winds with a smell like fresh rose petals, “The life in the garden will accept some of the evil if they repent unto me.”

And he extended his hand through the gates, and it swept over the lake of fire. And the lake parted in half where the evil was found, from its own bottomless depth, to show all who were accused and for Lucifer to reconcile his past evil. And in that tomb in which Lucifer was bound, he found within him Jesus working, within the dark anti-materials of his own body.

And Lucifer writhed in his binding, for he knew the day had come. And the new offering of the Holy Ghost was found. Jesus was offering that covenant of the Savior and Messiah. And the covenant, which outweighed the golden crowns of many despicable people, was the Truth over Lucifer’s hellish pit.

The covenant that Jesus promised then through the sacrificial lamb with horns, was to flip and invert the ugliness away from the darkened souls. And the quicker the shadow devils and fallen angels could evolve with his creation story, the sooner the anomalies would be taken back into the garden of Paradise.

So it was that Jesus's teaching brought them freedom from spiritual blocks, as he had planted a seed in those hearts of evil who acknowledged the spiritual light and came to take his extended arm.

And the Messiah, Jesus Christ, said, "Of all those who loved me and suffered from your devilish ways will still acknowledge your sacrifice. However, you will be in the garden yet made to repent and suffer still. For the purification of love needs to unfurl in your souls. And the spiritual light needs time to heal, for the sake of others, and yourselves.

"And through my love for all who begin to acknowledge a new celestial order on Earth, they will begin to mirror and invert their histories of sinfulness and repent. For the day has become eternity again in the heavens.

"At the right hand of the Holiest Father, I will read of this co-creation story, time and again, for all to honor His miraculous works. In those events in which miracles take place, the crystalline waters will be turned to frozen fire. And in the celestial order, Lucifer will never again be accepted into the heavens. For in his second death was his twin, the fallen angel Azrael.

"And death will not be known for all else, as the trees will grow and the wind will work into seasons only to mature the spiritual nature of the beasts, birds, and people in Paradise.

“Author, as you look down from the Tree of Knowledge, which contains the roots of the fall of Adam and Eve, you can see you are not far from the tomb. Can you walk with the apple and hand it back to Lucifer?”

I saw the spoils of war, infestation, plagues, and death inside the flesh of the apple. And the seed was turned to the evil of the darkened rot of humanity. I lifted the apple up to throw into the cavernous tomb of Lucifer, only to be corrected by Jesus, that I was to hand the fruit to the source of all pride, greed, lust, and temptations.

So it was that I walked over to the tomb and saw Lucifer in extreme pain and humiliation, for all in life persecuted him, as they had done to his father. And I made the original fallen angel taste of his offspring's evil doings.

Lucifer cried, tasting his own medicine. He hated himself and wanted only his own freedom from such anguish. Lucifer wailed and said, “From my hands are the fallen angels given their freedom to choose the heart or a collective leviathan from which the earth will fall to me. And in that choice is this story told from the Heavenly Father.

“The Father is the source of wisdom and intelligence. Being awakened to that foil of inverted and mirror-opposite truth, can provide freedom. For it is that the doors to each projected spirit will be opened and the hearts forgiven. And those who stay in that political leviathan will suffer the same as I will. Since I will be its head, working to bring about its alien doomsday prophecy. And all who embarrass the good and noble will enjoy their immortality for one last night.”

Lucifer spat out what he had chewed. Each seed of the apple was like death that touched the land of the garden of

Paradise. And those roots that shriveled up and looked unhealthy sprang back, but only a few moments later.

All the souls who had projected their virtual lives into the universes were happily reading their maps back to Heaven. For their memories, which had felt like frozen blocks in the sense-making utilities of their physical bodies on Earth, were beginning to invert and mirror those ideas back around. And the faster they were able to manipulate their memories into an awakened understanding of the time and space of their existence, the sooner was their self-propelled journey back to the garden. The mysteries of the Heavenly Father were unfurling before them. And their judgment became a search for those they miseducated and mistreated in the past.

Therefore, their projections were never to walk away from the heavens through a leviathan of political might. Their projections, which revealed their truest natures, were to be untangled and forgiven by the people they abused. And the projections for whom that task seemed to be insurmountable would need their purification to be accomplished solely through the Savior and Holy Spirit instead.

For the anomalies of evil were asking to be placed in the hands of the Savior once more and to be led back to that heavenly home of all of ours.

Chapter Thirty-Seven

From the ground in the heavens, the souls came back to fulfill a prophecy of one heavenly home from the kingdom of Earthly providence. The ram offered a new covenant to the people through the story. And in good faith, the Father struck lightning into the minds of those souls who understood and aligned with the newest covenant. For the angels travel from light, and the bolts of lightning were charged to send a message to His followers. The angels were caretakers of the garden of Paradise. And all of the life was to be recognized as valuable. This value was even greater with those souls coming back from the hellfire into the garden.

The angel Raphael came upon me at the Tree of Knowledge. And he carried a harp. He played music and sang in celebration of the heavenly harmonies. God was in all animated life, aware and intelligent, to some degree of effect. But the angel Raphael observed that the feet, hands, and minds will work toward a unity that surpasses all intelligence known to humanity.

Then he said, "In the coming morning of the newest dawn, you will see the lake of fire be destroyed forever. Look toward the newest celestial order. Find within it your secret. That within your soul, the body of all life was acknowledged through Jesus Christ. The crystalline structures that were frozen materials will bridge toward the heavenly home of God, where the golden streets will pave the way for your feet to carry you in his plans." And in the meantime, you can re-

joyce and play music and sing to announce his arrival as Messiah once more.”

Angel Raphael gave me a drum. Something that I could carry, but nonetheless an instrument that would be carried through my heartbeat. And in the majestic, harmonious rhythms, each sound reminded me of what it took to be in Heaven. Reflecting back over all the good work and repenting I had done in my lifetime, I thought to myself, would I ever be as balanced as the sounds of the Holy Spirit in my heart?

Raphael was listening into my thoughts. Meaning to encourage the purification of my spirit, he asked, “Author, do you understand yet how to live like you’re harmonized with all animated life in this garden? Were you not going to address how interconnected all life is with the Creator’s design? And in describing those ideas of harmonizing natural and nurturing puzzles, were your stories not going to cure more people of the flaws in their patterned mindsets?

“The beast is going to perish soon. And all those who repent will need to understand how to utilize their hearts to live in harmony with the garden. We angels will carry our sounds across the spirit of others to answer their questions as well. And the memories from which they question their previous understanding will be subjected to judgment.

“Follow all things that are of that celestial order, Author. Transform the celestial and universal mind that you know as a book of life by the Creator. And within that life-giving attitude which mesmerizes all earthly subconsciousness, the larger roles, other than just in the garden, will develop through the heart.

“Author, throughout the existence of humanity, the stars have been a window into the stories told of ancient Gods talking with the people. And in the celestial or universal mind, the people identified with the spirits who walked within their bodies. These angels walked with them to offer insight and support.

“We angels have a new orientation in the roles that nourish any spiritual inclination when humans are adapting to a lively sky from on the earth.

“Through your writing, you will inform humanity about this universal mind and prepare people for how the garden will expect their behavior. And the spirits that come and go, as we angels are often introduced before God Almighty and the Lord Jesus, will announce their presence.”

Angel Raphael started to play his harp. And I followed his lead, playing a drum beat to his song. And in harmony, the music started to turn the skies on themselves while the nighttime overlapped with the day, and together they rushed toward other galaxies and universes.

The angel then looked at the crystalline universes below the garden of Paradise. And the seeding of friendships between spirits of nurturing support had been carried out through the Holy Ghost in the hearts of many. And those spiritual lights that began to take shape in their hearts were of the same reflection of the celestial mind, constructed above them in a mirrored way.

“Author, the inversion of the stars from a natural light, to be acknowledged as a nurturing light, is the place we can begin to bring about this awareness about human behavior. For it is a gift that life was given to them originally, from the

Heavenly Father to Adam. And it is this prophecy of a gift, and not Adam's fall, that will continue in conversations in the absence of the serpent and his fruit of devilish wisdom.

"The snail on the ground is slow to recognize Adam. And yet, within its shell and its being, it supports its first cousin of all life. That the snail has a purpose, we can all understand from its role on the earth from its inception of life.

"So it is at a gradual pace that the snail understands to give itself time to make its home here. And in return for its work, it will receive that rebirth to the garden.

"If men could nourish their souls as we suggest, with Adam in mind, talking with the Heavenly Father, respect for the boundless circles of magnetism would exist in their wisdom. For they could understand how nature nourishes the body. And in making sense of those overlapping, magnetically charged bodies, the patterns would reveal how all natural and animated things react."

The angel Raphael sounded the harp once more, though, not in the way a horn is sounded to signal the end of the trial of the Morning Star. The sound of the harp, I noticed, was music emitted from strings, like a tapestry of sounds that conveyed peace.

Angel Raphael said, "Author, you play to the heart beating in your chest. You are more oriented to this organ than to the celestial mind. For you are fearful of letting go of control, as the voices might attack you in those darkened thought patterns.

"However, with these sounds of the harp, you will be assured that all things will balance out within nature. Author, your mind is being tested by Satan and God, even though

you have already been tried by both. And when you speak through your heart, you stay connected to a conversation within your soul. But you remain disjointed, as many people have attacked your senses, and thoughts of humiliation come back to you when you trust anyone other than your soul and the spirits in the heart.

“Author, the garden is a place of serenity. And to teach about that, you need to trust others once more. For the sounds of all nature will overwhelm you if you cannot trust your surroundings. You are not to stay within yourself any longer. The chaos that was the dragon called Morning Star is bound. And this will purify the many hearts that still want to be in the garden.”

Angel Raphael put a hand on my shoulder. It surprised me that he would reach out and pat me on the right shoulder. His confirmation that I could accept his guidance was evident from the beginning of the conversation. But to confirm trust through this type of spiritual acknowledgment, through spiritual bodies, was bizarre and foreign to me.

“Author, you will find that nature will reach out to you as well, to provide you gifts of nourishment and support among your final days on Earth. And in that reflected universal mindset, you will begin to understand God’s inner workings again. For it was a long time ago in the history of humanity that the trust of all animated life was accepted spiritually, through which the heavenly order interwove their gifts into the cycles of life.

“And the gifts that you receive from nature will once more be inverted and mirrored back to the celestial skies, to

demonstrate your trust and belongingness as part of a divine order.

“It is no longer chaos that you seek to reconcile and clarify with the truth. For that nourishment was found through putting evil on trial. Now your obligation is much simpler. You must ask forgiveness, through which all life depends on your actions. And your interactions within the web of interconnectedness will teach the plants, beasts, and birds of your soul. You will reciprocate the gifts you receive. For instance, offering to be part of the order is a reciprocation of the positively or negatively charged bodies toward balance on the earth.

“Author, the communities that are built in these earthly gardens will soon delight to find that the nourishment is plentiful. And the acknowledgement of society’s evil greed and lust will be a painful scar in everyone’s memories. That scar in which a doomsday prophecy was almost fulfilled can be seen running across the universal mindset, and on the earth.

“However, in a broken order, where trust is no longer offered by or to the dead who walk around, the knowledge gleaned from speaking to the Heavenly Father will grow. For it is in these conversations that have occurred throughout our history, initially through Adam, that the Father shares with you the secrets you know.

“The celestial spheres will begin to unify once more. And all universes that are acknowledged as projections of souls onto the planes which we call space and time will begin their transformation.

“Although there have been many Gods and spirits worshiped by your human ancestors, you will speak to the Christ as one body of nourishment. And he will bridge the divide of knowledge where a healthy universal mindset will readily invert and mirror back nature’s offerings.

“This is the story you must tell to lead in your community. The rain falls and nourishes for a spiritual reason. And science, as abstract as it has become in explaining the world’s surroundings, will be accepted to solve a greater mystery – the formation of that celestial order from chaos.

“Author, the world that you experience from the heart is represented by a sphere. And the decisions made through your sensemaking capabilities are represented by a cube. That celestial sphere nurtures your body through nature’s emotional and spiritual understanding. And the cube of knowledge is ultimately that body that Jesus offered in your previous conversation.

“The inverted and mirrored messages of yours received in nature will be full of animated life. And trusting the Creator in your dialogues will bring oneness with the Father, whom you will start to resemble through your decisions made. And the language and thought patterns of humanity will shift toward using more verbs to describe that animation. For this practice will help communicate more effectively the interconnected nature and cyclical patterns of life in that garden of Paradise.”

And the angel Raphael played beautiful, harmonizing music on the harp. And more angels became apparent as I trusted these sounds to show me another lesson. Angel Raphael mentioned that nature on the earth would awaken

my mind and shift my thoughts to a balanced approach. Yet Raphael did not share how the spiritual notes that overwhelm my soul would bring me into friendships with my ancestral kin or other angelic beings.

Chapter Thirty-Eight

Surrounded by the angels, I felt at home. This house felt as secure in loving admiration as any possibly could be. My heart began to flip over its own polarity, and my heartbeats were oriented to their angelic beings, for my heart was syncing into a rhythm with their presence.

The angels around me, who numbered fifteen in total, were there to share in great joy. For in my heart was a source of light that was both spiritual and natural. And the end of time was almost ready to collapse the natural light from the earth's existence.

I saw the people who believed in God, rising from the earth in spirit and tunneling their way to the center of the universe. And at the other end of the spiritual light was the garden, whose entrance was protected by the angel Gabriel. And all things that were deserving of punishment and that were saddened by their own despicable acts in life were placed in fields afar for a chance to repent. And their evil that was recognized and discussed by all of the good and holy people whom the transgressors had harmed. And their burden, which was a beast of evil, was known as a behemoth.

The angel Gabriel spoke to me from the crowd of angels. He said, "Author, it is from this moment that the end is planned. The first death was of your physical body, and the second will be of the evil in the spirit. Let us rejoice, for Jesus has come forth to enter into your conversation within the co-creation story. For you have elevated your heart to receive

us angels. And we offer you admittance to his loving embrace once more.”

My spirit, of its own accord, rose up effortlessly. I believe the angels helped guide me in Heaven. And through each gate I went further into the kingdom of Heaven to discuss what this story would hold for his majesty.

And I saw Jesus in my thoughts. He was standing off to one side of the palace room. And at his side, he said for me to sit. The Messiah and Savior said, “Author, do not worry so much about sitting amongst the people of Heaven, as you have done. This is a place where people do not suffer any longer. The souls who witness you in Heaven rejoice as a crowd that shares your ideals. As such, they wish to involve themselves in your story by telling you their testimony. And as they describe how I, their savior, helped guide them as sheep, they will exclaim their thanks.”

I let my body carry itself into that seat Jesus pointed to. It was a happy moment, but confusing nonetheless. For I was unaccustomed to hearing such admiration for my behavior. I only loved the Messiah as he loved me. And I have shared my stories freely, as I was told to do. I thought about what had taken place in their lives and in the spiritual home of Heaven, all of which resulted in this moment. And I spoke without thinking, with a magnetized tongue.

I said, “For all who enjoyed the ideas presented in Jesus Christ’s testimony, let the gospels guide our conversations. For that truth is what the spiritual light has nourished our thoughts and love on for approximately 2,000 years. And for those who listened to and were affected by those words, and their loved ones, let them recognize the rising of their souls

back to the heavens through the tunnel of love, light, and laughter.”

And I continued, “For it is through the gospels that we knew him, and we overlap our humanity with the creation story of Jesus Christ. And it is in our hearts that the Holy Spirit let us learn of his spirit and truth. And through that spirit, we are connected and elevated through the angels.

“For all of us here, who have followed the Lord Jesus Christ in our lives, and sought to give him glory through intuitive prayers and giving, our alms of charity did benefit our church in Christ’s vision. For members of all the religions are in the heavens, and these all have come through his spiritual body, and therefore all have been blessed from their acts of alms-giving and charity.

“The gifts received were of nature, and the gifts given were of thoughtfulness first. These were to be repaid only through acts of kindness and love in return. These exchanges of gifts and charity were my calling as a storyteller. I also listened to the gospels. And those words, along with what I was told through the Holy Spirit, were the fruits of my testimony of the living God, that I rejoiced to tell my readers about.”

And the crowd before me cheered these ideas. For they understood how influential the gospels were to humanity. And those who had not read the gospels still understood through the spirit how to give gifts and receive in the spirit of charity.

One soul stood out to me. And before they walked closer to me and the Lord, they asked a question loudly for us to answer. That soul, who was innocent of wrongdoing but felt humiliated in their lives, said, “For those who were in power

and sent to the hellfire over their choices in life, would they recognize the gospels fully? Does Jesus weigh their torments against the pain of their tormentors for their evil works?"

The crowd's cheering slowly calmed to a silence. And the innocent soul praised Jesus, exclaiming that they wanted his memory and testimony to stay with and lord over Satan forever. However, the error of this temptation was that Satan had understood and withstood Jesus Christ.

And I spoke first on that subject. Not so much willingly as inspired from within, I just started to talk. "The evil ones who watched Jesus rescue their captives through his miracles were then admonished. And when they left in fear of Jesus, they saw his spiritual light. That memory will be forgotten, but not erased. For the darkness will prevail only to be ended in totality. Theirs is a second death. That death will consume their evil until there is nothing left to forgive or forget. They sacrificed others who were innocent only to become something non-existent within themselves. The Morning Star, the embodiment of all evil, will perish. And, as his mindset was the leviathan, the political corruption will be gone with that second death. And for those souls who needed purification in the garden before they were prepared to enter the kingdom once more, their loving reflections will be asked to part with their evil ways. The behemoth of their evil, loathing ways, which they repented for in their heart, will be taken in the second death."

And Jesus stood tall before the crowd. He raised his arms upward in a triumphant stance, with palms open. And he said to his heavenly realm over which he reigned, "The first day was of darkness and light. And now it will be that we

will close the gates of Heaven. And the tunnels that were interconnected through all living and animated systems will shrivel, as their ends, which attach to the gates of Heaven, will be severed.”

The gate in the filament below Heaven closed. And Jesus said, “The torture of hellfire will fall from the lake of fire now into the earth, as if a plague of darkness were raining down upon all. And the disconnected gates of Heaven will no longer wait for the light to rescue the night’s darkness. For the first day is over.”

And I looked to Jesus as the earth shook so violently that we felt it in Heaven. And the shaking of an earthquake followed from within our souls, with legions of people screaming of famine, death, pestilence, and war. The plagues that were of their own creation then were fed from the lake of fire back to them.

Jesus spoke again, “And on the second day, it was that the dome in the midst of the waters changed the sky and universes. The people who projected from the heavens into the universes realized what was happening, as they had grown accustomed to using their senses to see, smell, hear, taste, and feel the natural surroundings in their minds. They presented virtual characters projected from the senses in their minds, an emotional part of their universal projections from Heaven to Earth. And so, the souls who had left the heavens to find a home on Earth became of clay. And their minds were nourished on both spiritual and natural light.

“At the end of the second day, that spiritual light will not exist. And they, those evil doers who fell and accepted the beast’s mark, will never be blessed again. They will project

their own evil curses on one another, while the spiritual light ceases in their hearts and minds. And the clay they came to know as their bodies will live only one lifetime.”

The hailstorm within my soul befell my own ancestry. For we came from a tribe that was an offshoot of the House of Judah. And the ancestors who were dead and buried and believed that they would rise on the last day, learned otherwise. For the bones that were to be brought back to life in the garden were already taken. And those souls were in Heaven. And all who wanted to stay on Earth and continue on their evil paths made a declaration that they would return to Heaven later through their hearts. But their evil was mirrored back within them, and they were brought down into the fires.

And I saw looks of concern on the faces of those in the crowds in Heaven. They worried that their prayers did not always reach their ancestors. And in their grief, they asked about those they loved, and those who otherwise were familiar and connected.

And Jesus responded to their concerns through a transformative spirit, in which all who were alert became loved. Jesus said, “In your hearts, you will find your memories of these connections are still there. The damned, though, will forget those memories, as they leave their bodies in attempts to find an exit through cracks of logic. And there is no more escape. For on the third day, the land, plants, and seas shall be produced. And, as it was the evil ways of the powerful and greedy that punished the earth’s natural bounties, our system of punishments will include extreme weather patterns. There will be colossal earthquakes, tornadoes, hurri-

canes, and monsoons, to start with. And each pattern will batter the earth on its rotation while flipping its magnetic core.”

The crowd gasped and whispered as this was proclaimed.

Jesus said, “On the fourth day, the signs of spiritual light and evil darkness are to be understood as spiritual awakening; but on the earth, and in the hellfire, there will be none.”

The crowd was now silent, as their prayers for those on the earth had been ended. And the connection with Heaven was severed from the people on Earth.

Jesus continued, “For the fifth day, we will let the beasts and birds in the garden eat the materials of death on the earth. For nothing will be spared, and all things that were alive can nourish other life.

“For the sixth day, only my image will remain on the earth. It will look like the garden once more, cleansed of the evil of humanity as they suffered their own torments and perished from the earth. And the spiritual home of evil will be fed into the lake of fire. The flesh then will be no more. And the sinfulness and torment will be forever ended on the seventh day.”

I looked up at Jesus, who wore the spiritual light of all the earth and universes once more on his body. And it looked as if he were wrestling with the idea of recreating a totally new ending to that co-creation story of Adam.

And I watched in awe as Jesus performed this miracle, which took all of his effort. As he created, I trusted in all things holy once more. And the anomalies that had been on the earth – the fallen angels, Lucifer, and then Azrael –

turned into a host of evil doers, and then were no longer felt in my soul.

Chapter Thirty-Nine

Jesus lowered his chin over his right shoulder and looked at me in exhaustion. And he opened his arms out to his sides to embrace all of Heaven. For it was finished. Lucifer had been thrown down into that lake of fire at the hands of Archangel Michael. And all the angels who were in the heavens sang, “Hallelujah, the evil of Adam and Eve has vanished. And we rejoice for the souls who repented, for now we have many to share our loving heavens with. Their minds and hearts were connected with our angelic prayers. And those who remain listened to us as we gave them guidance from the Father.”

And the crowds rejoiced in jubilation, for it was that they had a stable and loving abode to call home. And they produced overwhelming support for those belonging in Heaven. They applauded and sang, “For Jesus Christ saved us, and we appreciate his loving embrace. For the heavens are good and full of people and beings who want the best for all. And together in spirit, we will combine to discuss things relevant to his goodness. For Jesus Christ is of a magnitude and order of unmatched and unimaginable goodness. And the evil that was once absorbed by his body is now but a scar; he showed everyone love, and he endured their torments. The devils that had been in the universes and the fallen angels who were drunk on love of their own power and lust have collapsed into the horizon of that portal.”

Another soul in the crowd exclaimed, “Why is that enough? Where can we go to continue to build on this church, where all may follow his loving guidance and endure

such hardships as he did? I will prove my love through endurance, as this feeling invigorates my senses to his passion. To be close to Jesus and walk with him in his lifetime was to endure such hardships. And I want to feel that love and support his presence with my entire soul.”

The soul of that man who had asked the question spurred many similar inquiries from others who were in agreement. For the atmosphere of goodness felt so overwhelming to the crowds in Heaven that they prepared to serve Jesus through any hardship they could once more.

And Jesus thoughtfully announced that the hellfire in the pit of the beast was dissolved. “To the many of you in the crowd who favor to learn of my love of humanity once more, the celestial order of my Father’s plan has shifted onto this body once more. The body of Heaven is of greatness to showcase the love within us all. However, the language still needs to adapt, to describe the glory and love of our home sufficiently. And it is currently the purview of the Holy Spirit to ensure that all communicate through the winds with a common language. This body of Heaven requires not only a loving obedience to my sense of equity, but the rule needs respectful and loving agreement and a common set of expectations.

“And the souls who embrace my body and look unto me for guidance will be in my likeness. They will have the authority of judgment over all things involving the question of suffering. For if the purpose is to suffer, the noble-minded will expect a fault to occur which would limit my love in relation with one another. And so, it is not my position to build that love for you to realize as a passion. My body is

enough to build your mansions on and communicate with one another in my likeness. It will not be an effort any longer as you practice a mindset which flips and inverts over the mirror of other people's perspectives. To understand one another is to love each neighbor as I would love you through them."

The crowd hushed in prayer, silently giving thanks for this explanation. The cure for suffering was there in their midst, and they focused on how Jesus had handled their sins before. But now, if they focused on their Christ, the king of this new shift in perspective, they could grow closer to his likeness. Instead of erasing the sin like Jesus had performed in his miracles, they would have a common mindset and language to build together as they embraced their lives with the guidance of Jesus.

And one soul toward the back of the crowd asked, "If there is a school to educate others in this perspective, can I belong there to help?"

And the crowd nodded in agreement, as they knew they needed to build a community together. And this body in which they now lived was interwoven together through knowledge of all things in the vessel of Jesus.

And I looked to Jesus and said to my savior, "I'm certain that these people would want to build on the memories from the lives they lived before. For most were provided education on languages and mindsets."

Jesus smiled. He began to speak to all in the crowds before him, to the wise and the saintly, the poor and the innocent, and he said, "Which language can you speak, that all may be educated in?"

And the crowds smiled and laughed, as they knew they were rushing into this conversation. And Jesus said, "The snail slowly develops its home. It trails through the earth and notices each blade of grass it passes. It decides on that trail where to go next. Slowly yet surely does the snail make its way to understanding what is best for it and its family."

Jesus continued, "The trail that we set into the future is a projection once more. And to make up or select a language simply because it is the easiest means to reach an end is to advance down a projection that walks without me. Instead, let us think of this mindset first – that of flipping and mirroring and inverting over a thought where we were likely to have gone. The trail of what could be, including all of the possibilities, should be discussed, but discussion must occur with the love we give freely between all things here in Heaven. This natural decree is meant to nourish each person's curiosity on how to develop as well. For they have questions and always look for a better understanding of this heavenly body as well."

I sat and saw the dove of the Holy Ghost appear, surrounded in spiritual light within the hands of Jesus Christ. He noticed that I saw this miraculous event as he continued to search the crowds. And soon, the crowds spoke together in happiness, but also confusion. For their tongues were no longer magnetized with one another.

And Jesus lifted his hands and thanked the Holy Spirit, which was in the form of a dove. The dove of spiritual light that carried messages to us all in our hearts flew off to a nearby tree limb.

Angels in robes and sashes then came into the crowds once more to greet each soul. And there was some confusion among those who wanted answers about how to proceed in spirit.

And Jesus spoke to all in a way through which all understood – the rhythm of the beat of his heart was felt, which we were all in sync with. And I felt within the innermost depths of my soul an answer that was incredibly profound.

The feeling from Jesus was that we are all led, in everything we do, through his guidance. Yet, when we decide to move and express ourselves through our spiritual bodies, they should just respond by initiating that movement. However, these movements incorporate his guidance, in compliance with the order of his body. The restrictiveness of a mindset wanting answers and powering itself through Heaven seemed absurdly human.

And we who listened to that guidance, found the wings at our backs flapping. For the wings, which were part of our spiritual bodies and therefore connected to the soul, understood our movements from before, when we last used them in service of the Father. Listening then became more important than talking. But together, we would solve one another's gifts, helping them turn their weaknesses to strengths.

Jesus listened as well. Then he sent a message through a medium that humbled all languages; bolts of lightning flashed through the crowds. It was his power and grace that was advancing past his human body. I flipped and mirrored this knowledge, and I inverted it back to within my soul. And then, my soul was at the center, and a powerful image

of the soul of Jesus was all around me, and around all other souls in the crowd as well.

I stood tall where I was. And I understood how all laughter, love, and light bound us souls together. However, there was one body in that sea of love in which I felt there was resistance. And I prayed, directly from my own perspective to whoever it was who was creating that resistance, asking them to abandon their egotistical mindset or accept an impassioned plea from another soul in Heaven. Then, a peace came over all things, as if the other soul had heard this prayer of mine. But, more likely, it was the work of the angels who were introduced into this body.

Once the peace came, I flipped the appreciation that I had for the crowd, and I twisted it, moving it around like it was a board with spots. And Jesus appeared again, in the same position as before, but he was holding the dove of the Holy Spirit. And charges shot out from the board like lightning. What we in the crowd gave to Jesus was more power. For his body was in his domain. And we in the crowd let our souls bask in his abundance. We each gave just enough to his power that we stayed connected together. And this power, which came from a charged sphere deep within each of our souls, began to breathe through us all.

And the language of life began there in our collective mindset. For it was that the evil had left the church. And this crowd encompassed one unified church, in which all members practiced his golden rule of law. And all began to associate with one another.

We spoke slowly, thoughtfully, and not over one another. It was as if we had a deep knowledge of the pulses that each

person was feeling in their heart. And that pulse was Jesus inside each of us, explaining to each soul their purpose as he guided them.

So it was that we unified the connection between all, while staying unique, to belong in Heaven. And that board, or perhaps it was a map, that had flipped on itself just seconds earlier, turned upside down for some and right side up for others inside their souls.

The creation story is of an order in which we speak a common language. We are forgiven for our patterns, given that we each have our limitations. And Jesus still has his place within our souls, unifying us with his love, light, and laughter. However, the angels work within us more frequently now. I have wondered whether I have assumed enough of their light yet that my soul resembles the light more than it resembles Jesus Christ. And deep down, I found that my purpose as an angel has helped me explore that very idea.

The seraph was named Uriel. He asked me, "Why did you not charge your heart for such a long time, Author? You must charge it to understand your life. Besides that, the stillness of your heart almost brought your death."

Uriel continued, "And at first, you had sought to be recognized with your wings, for every once in a great while, they produced spiritual movement from within your human body. But then you felt those wings and questioned your purpose as an angel. And now you know how we, as angels, function through the Christ.

"We allow our wings to carry us as needed. You shall do the same. And with compassion, you will pray for the advancement of other people. They might need more answers

than you can pray for, but that is up to Jesus to address. You will likely watch, and listen, and record what transpires in the books of people. And this language, which had a beginning before the earth and universes, will begin to breathe very rapidly. So quickly that it will harmonize within all things in Heaven in an instant. And the shock of this light, which is power, will begin the celestial order, new and fresh. For you and the members of Heaven will have dominion over the charges. And you are interwoven in all things as charges. And if there are members that forget to mirror and invert themselves to this balance of neutrality, they will begin to grow toward the outskirts of the map. And the waters that run off the map will either advance up from seeds, or down as a universe of stars.”

Uriel continued, “This is not necessarily evil, until the resistance builds to break from Jesus. He will judge that story as false. And the end will begin, but it will advance more in line with what he envisions.

“The language we speak to him will be slow, and guided. And in harmony with an interwoven life, the winds of spirituality will flow before us. The wind may be seen, and time may be felt. But all things will lead back to Jesus, as his body breathes renewed life through all of Heaven.

“Author, his Father, the great goodness of the Alpha and Omega, in whom all things stand still in equilibrium, speaks for you and within you. Listen once more. And you will begin to understand His grace and power in a likeness greater than us angels.”

Chapter Forty

The Father looked from everywhere and always in His own glory. And I assume He saw the board that was a map flip and breathe into all in Heaven a new connected celestial order. And when that board would stop, the members of Heaven would identify themselves as unique souls working in Lord Christ's body.

And the Father of all time and of all things said, "The truth is a blur between fact and fiction. It is felt, and non-attached. So, practice listening to your own words that you feel. And give grace to Jesus for allowing those feelings. That is an inward understanding. And yet, the soul is once more above that body. Not by much, but enough to separate your truth from the rule of love from Jesus. Author, your soul understands more than your body.

"The next soul who realizes their purpose to live as a likeness of me, their Heavenly Father, or Jesus Christ, will begin the breath once more over again. And the map will continue to separate the lands from the seas. And your body will move a bit away from the soul and other people's souls. And over the breath of love in the universes, all things will settle into an interwoven tapestry where respect and belonging are fundamental.

"Live off this understanding for now. But in your soul, keep moving a mirrored and inverted perspective to the left and right. For the logic and creativity must stay in between the extremes, lest you fall again to a new life. One in which the outcome will be very different.

“You will hang each of these creation stories in me. For I collect the artwork and majesty of your efforts. And I value these stories that showcase my own understanding.

“And because you have figured out this maze, there will be forgetfulness within you. You will forget to stay aware of the new language that you speak. But remember that, inside you, very deep down, there is love from the Savior.

“Author, the board that flipped over itself and was of all things in Heaven, and that is now seeding your new angelic self, will grow in power. And within that power, that charge that collects the souls within its reach, you will also grow in power. And the understanding of love that brings you closer to a likeness of Jesus Christ and myself, your Father in Heaven, will be shown in how you speak our language. For it is through understanding how a mirrored and inverted approach keeps us balanced and neutral.

“Author, you are an angel of a new celestial order, that is about to experience something new, and learn all about how we in Heaven work. Your likeness to the angels is paramount, as you will be welcome in a new home in Heaven and around others in the universes. But this new creation that will be felt and examined will come in time.

“As for now, learn about me and my heavenly workers. They are the messengers that carry upon the Holy Spirit my communications with all. And in experiencing newness, you will understand how I speak. That language that focuses on remaining fair and balanced in an interwoven web of universes is exactly my likeness you fail to recognize yet.

“And the three-dimensional checkerboard that you see, smell, taste, hear, and feel will increasingly be understood

only by the souls who make sense out of their environment. Their language is different from yours. They speak to points which they can understand for themselves in their minds. And you will speak to a freer language which adheres to my guidance.

“The language we speak is of a new dawn. And in the earliest temptations of creation, your story will unravel again. Except then, your story will include the memories of being in the heavenly body and connected through the love of Jesus Christ. Which your body will change.

“Author, since your body will move toward peace in a harmonious garden, you will live with a less frequent use of pronouns and more frequent use of verbs. And this change in language will reflect how I move around all things in love and keep them bound to that love through a connection, and this will be known as a tapestry of a sea of charges in the universe. And in that movement of chaos once more, you will understand how you are merely part of an endless story of creation and recreation.

“These cycles of life in the garden bring us back to where the angels found you, speaking with Jesus Christ. Author, that crowd of angels in Heaven will participate in these new experiences with you and grow with you. They will support you from the heavens and in the universes. As you have now understood, the celestial order is above the natural setting. And you have seen how to flip and invert those teachings to remain on that map of charges.”

The Heavenly Father looked through my life story once more. He was proud of my achievement, passing the test of evil in a chaotic world and putting the Morning Star on tri-

al. From that beginning, He read how I had spoken through His Holy Ghost to understand how Jesus provided his covenant. And He saw that the mindset that grew from understanding these stories strengthened my resolve, so much so that I had a place in His life and heavenly abode. For it was that Jesus extended his hand from my background, through which he had watched through my earthly father's spirit, to enjoy the outcome of humanity's trial.

The Heavenly Father said, "The Morning Star is gone forever. His rejection of me, his Father, and my son, Jesus, is forgotten. That is because all things in me are love. And his hatred of me was forgotten, since it no longer had any love. The devil did not fear my presence or authority. And therefore, he walked stupidly into his own tormented lake of fire within himself. And we have made a new co-creation story in his place.

"Author, your fiery father pleaded for forgiveness, and for that, he gave himself to a story within my love for you. For he had encouraged not only your patterns of stubbornness, but also the wicked humiliation of your denial. And in a strict sense, he apologized for encouraging his own patterns that refuted my son's suffering. For you followed Jesus through these punishments.

"And in the trial of humanity, your father left that pit that he feared to involve himself in my heavenly garden once more. And he saw and kept my secrets within himself. And he watched over your story from afar as he prayed on your behalf.

"Author, your father fell within a tribe that a leader offered to him in his own co-creation story. And the arc of his

life story will change and adapt as needed for him to learn my language. And his spiritual connection will be felt from time to time as you understand memories of him. And he will understand you in that connection. That is how the spirit works to bind all things in love and grace.

“And your family will go through the same type of reconnection of spirit when you come into the presence of Jesus Christ. The heavenly crowds will grow, and they will continue to group together in a connection with his loving body. And the memories will resemble one another as he exhales, and while inhaling, each will unravel in a new language, as that is how the spirit of a loving connection works.

“Away from the heavens, you will find yourself working to understand how to grow. That is, through me in that interwoven connection of love, you will bring more souls to the crowd. And in that power and glory of Jesus Christ, you will, as an angel, understand me, your Heavenly Father, in greater likeness to me.

“Love is an outcome of care. And many who endure trials will be influenced by your care. As a messenger, harboring hatred will result in forgetting my love, and this is the cruelest punishment. And in my judgment, I will offer forgiveness only to a point where my creation can remain in balance and equality.

“Author, the beginning is upon your soul. Your story thus far has been about humanity’s trial ending through a judgment of the Morning Star. And in that ending, you have come full circle to rebirth in a new creation story. That story, once told, will show you to be a seeker of spiritual knowledge. One of my likeness.

“You will walk through the spirit in an opposite and inverted fashion of positivity. You will be moved in my love to be carried on the winds of the Holy Ghost. For you found a greater order of spirituality than that in your previous lifetime, that being the self-will to move.

“Author, I have been impressed by our conversations up to now. And your spirit often listened to my messages through an intuitive reflection in the heart and mind. Now, you will have the opposite type of message. The universes will be explored through my Holy Ghost. You will find your place in my celestial order, and share what you learn with others. And in time, that reflection of mirror opposition and inverted balance will work to offer signs to other creatures in my garden.

“For their understanding will be limited. And their prayers to understand why my spirit would take and give so freely will be your opportunity to intervene.

“Author, your trial will now be like a snail’s trail. Slow and methodical to announce my connection to all things in love. And the universes will give signs to those who cannot yet announce how my love works as a sea of charges on a board in Heaven. That my kingdom of Heaven is above the filament, and the roots of my garden are below. This is the basis of the language to decipher, and offer as a trial, as you walk with my son, Jesus.

“The beams of spiritual light that escape your body, full of charges themselves, will be bright rays in the universe. And those who question this awareness of those rays will be drawn to that filament. And they who have ignored the wisdom of their Holy Father will be gathered to question, in the

intuition and consciousness, whether life is so abundant in their garden.

“Author, your place as an angel is to help this garden spread a seed to deserving people and to till the soil and protect the balance. The roots of the trees in Paradise will take hold. And the conversations will begin. Once more, life will be thought of as sacred in my spiritual connection of love. The homes of all will be bridged closer to the filament as the thoughts and language are understood through my glory and power.

“In time, I will send forth other angels into your creation story. And you will adopt your new home to understand their knowledge. In time, the growth of those creatures who question my spiritual existence will look back and laugh and talk with the angels.

“In all things will angels be sensed. And the conversation between the celestial order and the universes will acknowledge Jesus Christ as Lord. This will be the second life you serve in my abiding love. And you will belong to his body in a similar way as before, but within his prayers instantly.

“The creation story of Jesus will become his breath. And he will stand as an example of perfection to all who look to his Father for advice. The likeness will be in his testimony of living in adaptation to his language of love. And all things will be in harmony.”

ART GALLERY

Part One

An Individualistic Perspective

Chapter One

When God's radiant light shone upon me, I felt immersed in a glow of unspeakable beauty. For He had a special connection with me, deep within my subconscious. Almost in spirit, but even beneath it.

On this day, as I sought prayerful communication with God, I was in my house, sitting at the computer where I could write about my experience. And in this conversation, I felt that God wanted me to stay where I was positioned, in relation to Him. I was to interpret that spiritual light on my own, as an individual, yet with total awareness of His grace. I turned to Him from within my soul. And from my perspective, where I was standing stationary but positioned where He wanted me to be, I saw that my point of reference was inside an art gallery.

Was this a memory of an art gallery I had been to or seen in my imagination before? I figured that if I were connecting with God in an art gallery for any reason, there was good reason to explore the beauty of the artwork. So I began to imagine the art gallery in great detail. From the balcony where I stood, I could see the large, open foyer below, with paintings hanging along the wall and a grand staircase in the middle. It was from this heightened vantage that I noticed a woman, walking alone across the foyer.

Without dictating where they went, I let my feet take me into the room that was adjacent to the balcony. The walls of the room were red, and only a few paintings were in there. As I was looking at one of the images, which was hanging near

the balcony, the female spirit came up beside me, gazing at the image as well.

The feminine spirit said to me, "It is quite iridescent, isn't it? The lines create a sense of topolatry; the earth covers the canvas until the sea sweeps in over the land in an uproar. And this is all while the hills and gardens reflect spiritual light onto a tree. And if you look closely at the tree, you will see a small figure asleep against its trunk."

Then I realized that I was being shown her perspective, because I could sense what she was describing in the artwork. She had given her living account of what she saw, but by her description, it was as if the painter had created the work to appease her.

I thought it was beautiful how she imagined the creative forces that positioned that small figure, a man against a tree, amidst so much liveliness.

And I realized that, in her own spirit, she was questioning the reality of her own thoughts about this man who slept against a tree. The art gallery was then a mutual reference point, into which she was projecting her spiritual essence, and her own materialization of a thought made it real, while speaking to me.

I figured that, if this art gallery was in fact a reference point for both of us, and I could perceive her through the senses, seeing and hearing her as she spoke to me about this painting, that I was likely in her vision as well. So, I wanted her to understand me. Not just my thoughts about the paintings hanging in an art gallery. But the deep, spiritual knowledge of someone she found fascinating, in a garden all by himself.

So, I turned from my position within God's command toward her a little bit more. And I imagined her sitting in that picture with the man under the shady tree. As I turned toward her and tuned into her heart rhythm, we connected. And there we were, in a garden that she seemed to enjoy so much, talking under the Tree of Life.

And somewhere in my own understanding, in the broader subconscious of my mind and, at an almost spiritual level of awareness with God, I was in a building where artwork hung, discussing them with other spirits, and God Himself.

Under the shade of that tree, I said to the woman, "I suppose you are curious why I'm leaning against a tree today, here in this garden. And if that is so, what are your thoughts?"

She smiled at me, and she felt an immense urge within her to talk, mentioning what an absolutely fine day it was. But then something stopped her. She said, "I would stay, but without any rain in the forecast, I worry. I think I must be in Heaven, and it is not at all possible to talk with you now, because my family needs the rain on the earthly soil. I worry about how we are going to eat. And if we starve, then how will this garden exist thereafter?"

I chuckled as I began to understand that her memories were, in fact, alive, and becoming aware of God's heavenly throne. And the garden was, in fact, a place to worship in life until God permits us to be present with Him in spirit.

I said, "In Heaven, I suggest that you find me again. For I seek an answer similar to that you seek in your faith. And we have already found each other, somewhere in mind and memories. So, somewhere very deep down within ourselves,

our spirits talk to each other in the garden of Paradise. But on the surface of your own co-creation story, you are experiencing a different state of consciousness altogether.”

The woman seemed baffled. But, as in all good-spirited people, she began to open up to the attractive idea that maybe we would talk across the heavens, as if the universes were just timeless, and our senses bridge our perceptions of each moment as a reality just for us individuals.

I said, “I wish to talk with you about another idea. It is through creativity that I see your spirit in my own thoughts. But yet, we share our identities from within, so deeply interwoven with God that He permits us to exchange our ideas. From your perspective, you imagine us in a garden. A beautiful location with a cool breeze to set such a meeting for a chance to engage in this conversation. Whereas I see you very closely within the presence of God. Trying to solve an intellectual feat, in which you speak to yourself about others who can guide you and your family to health. Such prayers are welcomed by me.”

She internalized her intuition, as these were feelings the conscious heart could readily understand. And somewhere in a universe where she experiences the earth, her mind was focused on prayers over starvation and frustration. And with her heart, in prayer, seeking to discuss it through her spirit, she found me, or at least, God introduced me into the conversation.

She asked, “If I say that I think that you feel my thoughts, would that make sense? Because our conversation is spiritual, and not just imaginary, I am sure. Where do you live?”

I pulled myself back to God. For I was so extremely interested in talking to her that I was no longer aware of my position, relative to God. I had become a man under a tree in the garden, whom she perceived. And so, my spirit went away from her heart, in which she felt her frame of reference, back to the gallery, where she stood in spirit. And I stood next to her, admiring her so.

If I was to be so attracted to solving her problems, I wondered if I would control the outcome. After all, it was God who had introduced me into our conversation. I know the Father works in mysterious ways. And this method was to introduce our souls together from a higher state of vibration or reasoning.

I wondered if, in any of my lifetimes that I now projected for a co-creation story, I would ever reach such heights of partnership as I'd envisioned, or if I would ever meet this feminine soul again.

I let go of the connection with her in heart rhythm, for that type of attraction would pull me into her world. I was unsure if I could leave it any time I wanted, or if I would enjoy her vision of us so much that I could fall to her in pride.

In the art gallery, she began to cry, and I worried that I had left her too soon. I wondered about her and the family she had on Earth. Was she hungry? And I wondered: if I had first encountered her in a chance meeting out in the physical world, would I mention how I could help her suffering by providing my love and work in alms to make things better for her?

As a surge of spiritual light arose in me, God spoke within my spirit. He said, "Author, you fail to use your imagina-

tion in life. You have love and compassion for people, therefore, you would help others. Looking at things from the mirrored oppositional perspective, this female soul needs your sympathy. And, as she is experiencing hardship, your identity is sought in her story, just as she wants to find love from her imagined hero.”

God continued, “The timing of events, her own perception in the present moment, and your position in an art gallery, these could not be further from the truth. For it is that I am your infinite source of love. I breathe life into new ideas and identities. Your universal awareness in spiritual undertakings will be described. For your story of needs and wishes will inform others on Earth, at any given time, relevant to their positions, what those needs and wishes are to be manifested.”

“For it is by my gifts from my heavenly spirit that I encourage you to be part of my love. I embrace your thoughts. Your imagination and emotional valence are admirable as you have been in my creation story and shown your love for me. I return such hardships as you have endured with support for the passion you bore, to have your needs and wants fulfilled. And it is in my creation story, and not your personal identity, that I will support you.”

I entered that connection with God. He had extended his love, light, and laughter to me in soul. And now, after understanding what He offered, I chose to know His creation story for me. I relinquished my identity, within my soul, to collapse into His greatness. As we became unified in understanding and awareness, the bridge between us was in sound. And in that understanding, He suggested what my imagin-

ing of the repelling and attracting of people in my life could be representative of, and I found myself in my earthly home, writing at my computer. For it was that, together in Christ, I connected with God.

But I was myself in my body as well. Unique to my own understanding, but built in the Christhood of God the Father.

And I began to feel a shift in my energy. I understood in my heart that I could see my own view, but a collective understanding was also beginning to take form. And between those two understandings, which felt opposite but complete together, was God in connection with my heart.

I focused on my heart in this divide, and then on the bridge between the two worldviews. The unique co-creation story I told of myself was inherently assembled from the signs and symbols that I perceived around me. I gravitated toward the icons in my house. These artifacts in my surroundings were loaded with emotional value. And I was attracted to understanding some of the artifacts. I asked God if these were important to His story for me.

I felt like one perspective was that the surroundings were shaping my story with emotional values. This perspective would mean that I was accepting the suggestions on the surface of the social and cultural aspects of life. These emotions called other spirits to me, whom I thought of as my groups, those which, whether included or excluded, I associated myself with.

A second perspective, however, was very familiar to me, in that, given my unique abilities, I tended to act on my strong will and impulsivity. However, my co-creation story

was being solved with the aid of God, the heavenly angels, and spiritual friendships. Therefore, all of the internal drivers that cause each person to identify with their ego were now being shown to me.

And like a forest and a tree, others influenced me, and I impacted them as well.

The female spirit that I had spoken with earlier had disappeared from me. Although I kept seeing her from a heightened viewpoint, like I had seen her in the gallery. She had seen me under a tree. Perhaps the understanding of the collective and uniqueness were being married ever so slightly from our awareness. And wherever she was in spirit, in a different place and time on Earth, I began to assume it did not matter. For when God was found between both halves of the whole, I would be reintroduced to her again.

Pleased with this account, I began to imagine what it would be like to understand that collectivist point of view. I thought of how this soul may take form in my life. And in my own uniqueness, I spoke a name I had given her, Sophia.

Chapter Two

The Holy Father spoke from deep in my heart, “Author, if you would like to understand how the heart relates to these ideas of individuality and collectivity, I will help you do so. For it is by setting the heart aflame that one’s destiny becomes known to them.

“Try to imagine me between your own understanding of something and the understanding of that same thing held by the group of people that surround you. Do you see that I am in that gap? Let me explain it this way: I am the binding between the many observant and the one observer. People have such diversified knowledge. And if they want to share knowledge effectively, it is up to them to bring me into the conversation.

“However, here, you have sought me first. And for that, I will reveal the proper way to incorporate such discipline in thought. The story you tell yourself within is self-absorbed and impulsive. You have a methodology or patterns in which you seek out in life that which confirms your own beliefs. There is little potential for growth with this perspective, and therefore it is beneficial to learn the perspectives of the collective groups that surround you.

“There are other spiritual forces besides me in the heavens that are at play between your solitary perspective and the perspective of the group. That is all you need to understand right now about the spiritual aspects.

“In a collective view, multiple people share the same ideas. The groups that surround you then impose an inward-

facing circle of suggestions and reflections on you. Whether you learn to pick up on the social cues or not is your decision. And it is right to understand that, when you are part of the collective, you are then imposing the social pressure on the individuals. So, when an individual understands themselves as a unique person, then you are causing that pressure on them from their surroundings.

“The bridge between the two perspectives is not a linear one, as they are not simply two halves beside each other. Rather, they are two halves that oppose each other, until I am found. For I am the equality between the two opposing sides, and I unite both into a whole of understanding for yourself and the culture around you.

“Think of it this way: you are living within a dream full of adversity. And the adversity mirrors your strengths and weaknesses back to you. But you are allowed to follow a set of instructions that the group gives you. You communicate the truth to yourself, and deal with the perspectives and judgments of the group as you move forward laterally. But the circle has formed around you, and there is another person inside the circle with you, when the pressure begins. Therefore, you and this other person form individual circles, nested within and radiating signals outward toward the larger, outer circle formed by the group.

“The culture in a society encompasses all of the signs, symbols, and artifacts in the surroundings. And it is that impulse to find the suggestions the culture exerts on your mind that shapes your perspective. The spiritual world provides the emotional meaning of such signs, symbols, and artifacts for your mind to understand. And as your understanding of

and attraction to the surrounding signs, symbols, and artifacts grow, so too does your motivation to express yourself. For what is language but the set of symbols and codes used to harness that primal energy of spirit to capture the attention of others in your environment?

“The signs, symbols, and artifacts are attractive aspects of communication with others. For example, when you tell a story, you speak from your own perspective, replying to the ideas of others and communicating your own. And everything is shaped by impulse and suggestion from these two perspectives. But ultimately, the bridge that connects the halves together is me, your God.

“Author, this is important, so listen carefully to us in the spiritual heavens. When you feel the pressure being exerted on you from your surroundings, you will understand that not all people seek me in their lives. Their perspective is formed out of greed and lust, and desire for power and control. Therefore, when they put a mirror onto you and employ strategies to understand you, they do so for the purpose to manipulate or deceive you. And they get you to act in accordance with their suggestions through mind games and hypnotization of the unconscious.

“Author, I tell you this because we began a conversation on how to imagine your vision that would tell a co-creation story with me, your God. And when you arrange a vision with me to fulfill your wants and needs, a battle in the heart begins between the suggestions from the signs, symbols, and artifacts and the pressure from the others around you. But you will speak to me in truth, and trust me to carry you to that passionate vision. And others will understand that their

pressure has less effect on you, since you are grounded in my love and understanding.

“Author, this is also important: When I am bridging the two halves of a whole, that co-creation story is then also part of my creation story shared with the world that surrounds you. And so, they will feel my suggestions and resonate with your claims of truth and desires to live out a life for me. So it will be that you are thought of as a good and holy man who will stop at nothing to improve yourself and the world at large, depending on how that heartfelt vision is imagined.

“You will seek and find me. And the people who surround you will foster this as they incorporate you into their hearts. Therefore, my voice should be obeyed. For the greater trust you have in me, the more you will understand yourself and your surroundings. And the board or plane that your spirit is projected onto from the heavens will once more revolve as if on a pole in the heart.

“The board that is the universe on one side and me in Heaven on the other is like that communication between yourself and the universal collective. The board is a two-dimensional square with two surfaces. You can think of it as being checkered on the side of the universes. And on the side of the universal collective is all of everything that brings you to me, your Father in Heaven. That side does not include time, per se, but rather a unified account of that energy of spirit that all things in the universe have interacted with. It is my Holy Spirit, throughout the perspectives of all life on earth.

“By understanding that you have a spirit in Heaven that projects into the universes, you understand your unique

body made of my clay. And on that flat side of the plane that you project from is a one-dimensional body of clay that evolves into a person in a virtual cube of three dimensions, as your senses interact with the world. Therefore, your body feels interactive through three-dimensional space and time, with motivation and agency. And space and time form a checkerboard, where polarities of attraction and repulsion are all around you in your mindful awareness.

“When you collapse back to the heavens, you will understand how time and space influence your life. And your spirit will gain awareness and learn through the advice given, through the angels, the Spirit, or my heavenly Son. How faithful you are to me is indicated by the amount of suggestion you are willing to assume and interaction you are willing to have with my Word through your intuitive heart. Therefore, the spiritual world is the basis for all decisions made and actions taken through all time, from your perspective. When you understand my spirit, both in this regard and through other people, who are experiencing life from their own viewpoint, then you will gain compassion and love.

“Earlier in your story, you were envisioning your angelic self and the other friendly, feminine spirit with me when I collapsed you into my love through a connection of love, light, and laughter. And when the board stopped revolving in your heart, you were attracted to a new story for your life. You wanted to put into language the symbol of the Word, which you felt emotionally as a balcony near the red room in that art gallery, and you wanted to understand her view of the man under the tree in the garden of Paradise.

“Do you see how you brought equilibrium in the form of love on the universal collective side of the board game? Your love was an awareness of the heart, and once the vision stopped, you began to seek out that same feminine spirit in your earthly life, on the checkered side of the universes. You promised yourself that love would conquer all, across time and space, and that your emotional awareness would guide you, through the signs, symbols, and artifacts that surround you, to find her in your story on Earth.

“Author, love is not a mirror. It is a representation of your faith in me to discuss the truth of our co-creation story together. And so, you must become aware of the strengths and weaknesses of yourself and the others in your surroundings to understand the Holy Spirit through space and time and incorporate its messages throughout your trials in life. That is, the game of life and the trials in life both motivate you to live out your passion for our conversations and putting trust in my Word. But, you must also understand the Holy Spirit through others, and deliver my holy works to them, explaining that there is a better world for them in my creation story.

“Author, my trial will examine how you bring our loving conversation into your surroundings with compassion, strength, and faith.

“When you saw that feminine spirit in your imagined world, it felt secure to you, and it seemed to last longer than it really was, due to your spiritual sensemaking process. Our conversation held the vision together, like a binder would keep thoughts together, as you entered her space and time, for just long enough to understand her wishes and needs. The spiritual light that created a lasting memory was spiritu-

al light. And the natural light of your physical realm was forgotten about until the moment ended. This is because I am the spiritual light in the world, along with my Son, Jesus, and the Holy Spirit.

“Author, take a moment now to recognize through your own thoughts how to imagine what we discussed, as I am the bridge between those two halves. Imagine what love is to you. And take a moment to realize, in your heart, who is affecting you, as well as who you affect. And realize that love is affected by polarities of attraction and repulsion as well. Part of your motivation to support others through their suffering is your compassion. And in time, your compassion will motivate your actions more than greed or lust. Your love can be strengthened by identifying with a group, or church, that forms resilience through education and fulfillment of your needs or wants. Therefore, understanding the collective love around you is not done out of lust or control, but out of service and obedience.

“And in this moment, when, through prayer, you set your own memories in the heart aflame, ask the angels to be heard. And in that spirit of grace, they will have pity on your life story and include themselves to walk with you.

“For it is that Sophia, the feminine spirit you encountered, is a kindred spirit. And to lust for or covet her would be of disservice to your awareness of her. To exert control or use power to get your wants or needs fulfilled is something of strategy and bullying. And I will quickly forget you and our co-creation story, and your pride will bring you down. This is the repulsion to which love does not respond. Greed and lust are the two horns that are primary in the spread of evil. And

you will need to lie and be deceitful to cover up such motivations for love, because anyone who sees, hears, tastes, feels, or speaks to that evil intent will be repulsed and not share their love willingly. And I will judge that control and power in your trial, in which you will suffer and be abandoned.”

God then said, “Choose wisely how to love. And let me guide your faith.”

I listened inwardly to God’s words, and in my heart, I found the space between the two halves of the whole. And between deciphering the suggestions and telling the story of my imagined Sophia, I began to feel that board, deep down in the heart, flip like a pole, attracting the idea of Sophia to my awareness. And I began to feel I was in her life, looking toward her from outside her circle of pressures, as she supported her own will to balance out that which she could accept and not accept. And, in my heart, God was connecting us together once more. And I was beginning to understand how we accept what God can give us and live out His faith in us.

And my vision, coupled with that outlook of helping Sophia’s suffering, together in resilience, was the first tunnel I created in my life with my surroundings. I had never truly connected with another soul on Earth. In a darkened awareness known only to myself, my heart began to imagine the love Sophia would enjoy with me, as I was patient to understand her. And the sense of suggestions that had been culturally imposed about what love was supposed to mean to me, the greed and lust that I saw, felt, heard, tasted, and smelled from childhood onward, were now laughable. For my culture of Babylon had great evil in it.

I began to understand how my heart was set aflame with that idea of loving Sophia for the fulfillment of both her needs and mine. And how the people around me might not understand yet about a love that was to be embraced. The surrounding people on Earth may still feel and make sense of evil as it was suggested to them by the culture. And they may not know how liberating it is to realize the connection between people through God's loving Word.

Chapter Three

Within my heart was a constant focus which I centered my attention toward. And in my heart was the rhythmic pulse of my magnetic heartbeat. The heart has a magnetic pulse that spreads outward. And when I reflected on the information about the nested circles and the pole flipping over itself in attunement with Sophia, I visualized a spiritual magnetic pole, with nested circles whose arcs moved in opposition along the curve from one end of that pole to the other. And as I tuned in to the nested circles, I felt an alignment of my spiritual intuition with my perception of her, and I felt Sophia's presence.

Thus, the magnetic attraction and repulsion could be felt both intuitively in the spirit, and radiating outward from my heart, beating in my body. But the intuitive spirit encouraged me in my story to understand the symbols, images, and memories I was perceiving and reflecting on. This resembled the feeling of the spiritual presence of God when He introduced me to her. And, as I engaged in sensemaking of the experience, I felt emotions in my body, along with pressures, shifting from my heart to my central nervous system and mind. And what I imagined in my mind felt almost like what she was like to my senses in the art gallery.

"Author, the tunnel from your heart back to myself can be discussed. As your Heavenly Father, I connect you with other compassionate people to understand how they feel and think. The presence that is felt as so subtle, it is almost at an

unconscious level that you understand it. However, you deserve to know more about how to perceive this connection.

“The imagined light that you recognize spiritually in your heart is from me. It connected to you as I wandered from your awareness. And in between all things unbalanced, you collapsed into my love, to recognize where you have needed attention.

“Author, you will accept as much hardship as enjoyment from what you perceive in life. You are aware of me in your limited spiritual knowledge. But you can sense my angels guiding you as a light scholar.

“Author, know that my being is not a hardship, but a forgiveness that is merciful. You must understand when you deserve my punishment, as I warn you early on, to protect you. And with these warnings, carried to you as messages from the angels, you can submit to or leave my love. The contrasting outcomes from the love from me and the pleasure from foolish earthly enjoyment come when the hardships are understood, and wisdom is gained. You can break through the spiritual blocks you have regarding the universal collective mind by testifying to the moments of sheer loving embrace of my heavenly wisdom.

“Now that you understand how and why I have connected with you through light, love, and laughter, I wonder if you can tune into something much different than the heart rhythm of another. Hearts attract and repel one another frequently. And instinctually, you feel when love from other people is being offered or withdrawn.

“However, in observation of the physical surroundings, I will offer to you a messenger. A seraph of my heavenly

accord will enter your thoughts and mindfully offer something quite exciting, as the angel can be sensed in multiplying your personal attributes into new thought patterns. You, Author, who has given your heart and soul in tracing my own Word back to my heavens, will now be stilled. And through a mutual gaze, you will enter into my thoughts through the Archangel Michael.

“He who has been given the compassion to project light into people’s hearts and become attuned with their spirit can sense what their motives truly are. The sights, sounds, smells, tastes, and other perceptions felt will at first resemble a hypnotic overlap with your personality. And, almost subconsciously to your own felt physical perceptions, you will allow the new thought patterns to transform you.

“It might almost feel like the communication of love in a language of a sensory capacity. You will understand Sophia in a very nuanced way. Not just her physical appearance, but her subtle gestures, her symbolic patterns of speech, and the artifacts that she associates with in the world. You will have a growing awareness of these through your seraph. And that language, which will become blended into your personality, will be sensed and understood by her as well, as the signals of the nervous system align with one another. This will happen through spirit at first. And your breath will be altered, much like your mind will adapt to her way of understanding the world.

“Your worldview will be a curious trance for her as well. But she will find that there is a significant overlap of symbolism that you both consciously apply to the world. And this will engage her subconscious mind. For if you under-

stand me, your Heavenly Father, and I guide you both to the same story, built through different perspectives, then you will collapse together through my love, eventually. And the trust that endures in the spirit, along with that enjoyment of knowing one another, will be recorded within the life memories and celebrated throughout your physical surroundings. Moreover, the memories of the world will become accessible to others through that secretive language of my loving embrace.

“Author, as your mind has adapted to its surroundings by becoming attuned to both halves – being a unique individual and belonging to one or more collective groups – it may become more sensitized to her perspective as well. This means that her mind and heart will counterbalance your heart and mind. And as you both rotate and flip over the magnetic poles in your hearts, the board game of love will revolve and flip in the mind. The two halves of the mind will then connect and discuss your feelings with each other. And she will discuss her sensory perceptions and social identities with anyone she wants to understand better. And the connection may grow deep enough that you develop a shared language that incorporates common phrases and jokes between you both.

“Author, this connection and development would show that your mind is becoming adept at the language of the feminine. And she needs you to engage your protective instincts to help while understanding her vulnerabilities. The hardships that you endure will become a gift of enjoyment with her. In your support for each other through adversity, you will bring an element of resilience to your relationship. And

in your protection of her, you will show her that she can be vulnerable in your insight. You build trust with her through your actions. And in return, she will give you gifts in mind, body, and spirit.

“The Archangel Michael is strong, and willing to help you advance beyond this adversity to a greater awareness through my loving understanding and mercy. Look at the things in the natural world through a lens of physical time. The collective understanding of the love between you and Sophia will last a lifetime if you adhere to my guidance. Follow my instructions when my spiritual light overwhelms you. Practice compassionate love, which means suffering yourself and helping to build a resilient experience in your group of family and friends. And that lifetime will, slowly at first, build upon what is in the heart.

“All things have a pulse that resonates in the collective universe. I bring opportunities in the mind, which feel positive and negative, like feminine and masculine emotions. In the mind, you can feel when I interact through your loving embraces with other beings in harmony. The rhythms blend, and the cyclical patterns of time in your mind become logical. Confusion can become clear in the mind, as both halves begin to build that language of love.

“Now, Author, prepare your mind to receive the Archangel Michael. This will require you to shift your focus and attention away from the heart’s vagus nerve, which connects into the central nervous system, including the brain. Follow that path within the nervous system up to the brain stem, and allow Archangel Michael to find equilibrium between the left and right hemispheres. You may experience

spiritual lightning bolts coming into the mind from the brain stem, awakening your patterns of thought. And when Michael finds your mind's eye, allow his light to shine like the sun in your mind. And as the archangel connects into your mind's imagination, remember to instinctively communicate with him from that magnetic pole in your heart. You can sense in his presence as a source of wisdom. And in this experience, your desire to know Sophia will grow.

"The Archangel Michael may leave through the imagined sun. And your awareness of your sensemaking experiences will be heightened, from unconscious to conscious. And Michael will continue to guide your thoughts, as I will continue to offer my love through the universal collective. The angels are a heavenly presence in Sophia and in your life. Yet, she is still mysterious to you. But in time, a natural and spiritual order will be established through my intervention and transformation for the enjoyment of all.

"Author, when the angels present themselves looking toward you in a mirrored way, love them with all your heart. And, for protection against anything hideous or dark, remember that my love is stronger than any social pressure to hurt or be hurt. And the angels that you perceive with any of the senses will seem more natural in nurturing your wisdom for Sophia.

"And in return, she will welcome your spiritual light in her mind. Almost like it was meant to be. When she shares a gaze with you, there is a twinkle that connects you across space and time. My spiritual light, which is informed by the seraphim, will work as a counterbalance to your magnetism. Trying to control this spark of interest would be cruel to you

both. When you understand such a spark between minds, you will begin to see how the thoughts of two people can meld together.

“Author, I do not know how things will happen exactly. But, you have limited sensemaking abilities, and you tend to shy away from adversity; therefore, if you find this imaginative spark with Sophia in the world, do not hesitate to become attuned to her thoughts. Be curious about what she is thinking. Proceed with care and space. And if you always seek my guidance, you will always be granted natural wisdom.

“My gift to you for your hesitation to act will be her forgiveness of you. Her heart will soften, and she will offer you a chance to build trust with her once more. Let her vulnerabilities be appreciated and heard. Give my love a chance to multiply in your thoughts and actions. Imagine what creation has involved for you both to exist together right now on Earth, under what this tapestry of souls calls the celestial heavens. Let your experiences be interlocked. But separate yourselves enough to talk to understand one another. And in those conversations that take place, know that you will be weak and strong together.

“Author, the magnetic poles that keep you attuned to the signs, symbols, and artifacts of the culture of your surroundings will become reidentified. Star-crossed lovers will emerge, unified in their understanding of my language, not as mere words, but as the unconscious feelings I impart in you both. And you will understand, in time, how I use my wisdom to emphasize your love.

“Author, when you were in the art gallery, and I held the two of you together, you noticed she was looking at a picture and projecting her thoughts onto what were your expressed emotions, depicted as a man’s body under a tree. She was reading what you felt. And you gave in, willing to be absorbed into her thoughts and perspective. But did you realize that, while you were explaining to her what was occurring, the breeze blowing into the art gallery was increasing? You explained, from her perspective, your heartfelt, intuitive feelings of my love. However, your feelings, from your own perspective, were of pleasure in being with her, so much so that you brought that frame of reference into being for you both. The front doors of the gallery opened for you both to experience that strange loop of time, from both of your perspectives, in one collective memory.

“This Earth is, in disguise, a story. And the chapters of the book we collect in our lifetimes are a written account from your angels. The book is stored in the universal records with all other co-creation stories for people’s lifetimes. The tapestry of my language is a curiosity, running throughout that record system. And like Sophia’s perception of your artwork, your perception of the signs of my love is evident, as you work to physically embrace the creation story I offer to you.

“The stories you tell to show my loving embrace show me your obedient faith. However, the world awaits enjoyment from Sophia’s understanding. As her narrative emerges into reality, she will exercise her judgment in a social setting and reveal her real nature. And your secrets with her will be explored through other family, friends, and relatives. In re-

luctance, she will expect your greatness, to provide her the story you say you will give. And with your trust in me and the signs given to her, I will continue to foster that spark of love between the both of you.

“Language is a difficult thing to master because it is not just written words or symbols. It is a feeling. Understanding the social cues between people going through adversity takes a feminine perspective of thought. And if you trust her admiration for her story, you will begin to understand this wisdom as nurturing.

“Within yourself is a spiritual connection that tunes into that feminine spirit. The angels will help you temper your frustrations when you acknowledge your denial. Trust her to understand social cues in thoughts first, and ask for forgiveness if you misunderstand her symbolic actions through the angels. If you realize what your denial was that led to the misunderstanding, then realize which artifacts presented will symbolize her feelings to regain trust.

“In God and spirit, let your thoughts emerge as different from hers. This mutual growth of affection is a balancing of all things between the oppositions of feminine and masculine. It will take action and attention, as well as an account of enjoyment and frustrations. Let that be your instruction, for now.”

Chapter Four

“Author, there will be a moment when my Word is intuitive within all things in the collective understanding, where half of your perspective lives. Through spiritual awakening, memories shift in the unconscious. I, as your God, will present the pictures you will witness as important. And you will understand the signs that point you toward the creation story.

“These pictures, which I shall raise to your subconscious, will bring you into a divine reality. One where the angels engage with your loving attributes. And you will understand the memories as a sacred symbology for life. And in your other half, in which you perceive the earthly realm, a checkerboard of magnetic poles is building up in the universe, on which you will eventually acknowledge your fate.

“Over time, throughout the cyclical events in history that steer your fate, are lessons that are understood from my creation story. And even if you remain obedient to my loving forces, both in your protection and your desire, you will fear me as well as seek me out. For the game board is not only focused on finding Sophia and bringing you together in the world, though you constantly seek her affections and thoughts, but it is also moved by my wisdom.

“Author, I will guide you until you will no longer listen to me. And in those moments where weaknesses are shared with the world, it will not only mirror those feelings and attributes back, but also test your resilience. And by now, you have gathered enough thoughtful actions of the collective to

earn a spot in the hearts of those around you. So much, in fact, that a collapse of your spirit may evoke a collective response that would be shared among those kindred in spirit.

“The minds of all who know the influence you provide in life will reflect your symbols. And through an act of your passionate purpose, they will give you some of their strength. And they will bear your co-creation story, as you are carried for mere moments with them.

“The universal collective, which is all that is felt of the Holy Spirit through the perspectives of living beings throughout time, emerges as your foundation to live our beliefs. And in signs, symbols, and artifacts that are created in the world, through a collective group mindset with my love as a binding, you will protect your identity from evil.

“Author, without those connections to a collective group, your weaknesses can be mirrored back to you and absorbed through your acceptance. But having a foundation of understanding between the two opposing halves of a whole will bring my spiritual light of the Holy Ghost into your heart.

“The group that is collapsed and reidentifies with the co-creation story they have with me will be transformed by my loving will. I, as your Heavenly Father, will protect you in this way, in spirit. And Sophia, who will continue to be her unique self, will grow closer to you in nature.

“This protection, without which a group would be able to get evil to enter your sensemaking through their suggestions, is balanced to stand up on a faithful foundation. And while you stand up to the evil, as it tries to use your own weaknesses against you, you will pursue your own passions.

Thus, the superconscious mind of the transformed group is like a prayer circle. And the strength that you regain in time shall have greater impulse control throughout the spiritual side of the board.

“Think of it as nested circles of pressure, both impulsive and suggestible, the self in the mind, and the associated group in the heart.

“When you grow from an unconscious individual, who runs from their fears, to a member of a greater superconscious, you stand through adversity with quicker growth. While a vain friendship that shows little purpose for the greater good lives with darkness. But when each of the friends in that nested circle carries one another with great understanding, the circle then influences the tapestry of life with positivity aligning with their beliefs.

“Therefore, the creation story inspires the patterns for each unique being to assume, that they may be filled with an intense spiritual light and rhythm, recognized in culture. And this spiritual light of ours, as the universal collective, gets stored in all actions through physical memory. And the spiritual light that has yet to be understood by the senses lies dormant within the unique being. So, all things spiritual project onto their checkerboard universe plane, where all their understanding is compared.

“Author, acts and thoughts of self-protection live in physical memory. The superconscious mind of the group lives in an instinctual future, yet to be understood. And the body is from the point of clay, from which the senses create a heartbeat, magnetically radiating outward. You are a social creature who lives in a biome of social languages, which

speak about compassionate suffering and shared resilient experiences.

“Therefore, when you think of the garden of Paradise, you can imagine a collective knowledge of a future yet to unfold. And those perspectives, held as a group or church, are many layers of realized prayers, actualized from the past into infinity.

“Author, when Sophia was looking into your perspective of this garden of harmonies, she felt only a low vibration. For her, it was like you were asleep under the Tree of Life. And that meant that you were not aware of all the life around you, providing their strengths for your weaknesses. And her family, who was thought of, continued to starve while searching for better outcomes. She did not know you, but she loved you enough to credit your spirit through her goodwill. And she answered what others thought of you from your surroundings. For her perspective was a harsher reality than what you understood it to be then.

“You were in denial of the struggle you accepted. Your faith was weakened by your acceptance of evil. And you were morally asleep, and your soul was in danger.

“My creation story, as your Heavenly Father, was therefore to offer this perspective to you in an art gallery. For your strength to understand and face her love was as a painter. You loved her because she was compelled to hear from you, despite your weaknesses. Yet her nature was strong. And her beauty was that she let you see the vision of her thoughts. But then, you became aware of her, and therefore, she noticed the social cues around you.

“Author, acknowledging this adversity that you have, of being unique and facing a life of memories both as physical and spiritual, then lets you grow strong, so you can protect her interests. You become strong in trust with me, and therefore with others in that superconscious group.

“This metaphor of a painter, who sees each being as a character, projected from spirit, is radiating out from within yourself. And your impulse to tell the story for others to hear is in response to an absorption of their communications and actions. Therefore, when she joined you under the Tree of Life, you chose to speak aloud. You asked her about herself. And she felt acknowledged to the extent she felt she could ask for your help, as she and her family were vulnerable.

“Author, I was the bridge to her asking for love in the moment. And the spark that created you to fall for her and protect her family was in another timeline or point of clay. The doors to the art gallery opened at one point, but that was from a breeze that you brought into her understanding. Love manifests the light within all who are exposed to me, your Heavenly Father. It was an awareness of her love that drew you toward her, and she attracted and repulsed you in those moments.

“Author, for Sophia, you were still a figment of her imagination. But in her heart, with which she lured others before to accept and befriend, the foundation of your passion for me was the rock she needed for confidence. As all things in her universe were not focused only on me, her God, but she could find strength in those who were passionate about the heavens. This characteristic was exceedingly strong, due to keeping that passion alive through her friends and family.

“And so, Author, the angels that are guiding you are working among that collective superconscious group. Your prayers are answered when they identify with you in their thoughts and actions. And family and friends will work to meet the wants and needs of Sophia.

“Author, I brought you into the art gallery, but you trusted your spirit to walk to Sophia; or was it your impulse? Or was it she who had prayed to find you? Did she hear of your struggles and focus on your heartbeat to connect with you through me, your God? And the angels who were called upon by those loving circles of friendships, was it your prayers they answered?

“In reality, you were not in the imagined art gallery, but positioned at home, writing away at your computer. But if memory is spiritual in the heart, and foretells an experience in our co-creation plan, which is more realistic? Because at your computer, where you wrote from your perspective with your limited sensemaking capabilities, you still thought this was a dreamlike occurrence.

“Author, I question if you understand my reasoning for addressing such a tapestry in the universes, from both the checkerboard half and the universal collective. The closer you are to me through the heart, the more attracted you will be to my love and her social understanding. And the further away from the heart, as in the mind, you will be deeper in a moral slumber, to the point of being tempted by evil.

“From which extreme will you work? A past pattern of memories in which you evolved protecting yourself? And ignoring your instincts to obey my love and your group or church? The reason I speak to you about this occurrence was

to move you to live in your imagination, set in passionate purpose.

“Author, your mind was made aware, however, the Archangel Michael thought for you so that you could identify only with protecting your dream for fulfillment. And Archangel Michael settled those fears, struggles, and temptations in your mind, while he impressed my Words upon others. And in obedience to me, Archangel Michael organized my creation story through the universal collective spirits of your friends and Sophia’s social network.

“The story told now is being imagined by emotions reflected through her social awareness for you. Your memories grow in her language to understand. And the sensemaking of the spirit catches her interest, moving her to tune in to your heartbeat as well.

“Author, the art gallery came before the garden for a reason. My gallery is unique to all the projected spirits who live in my Heaven. And she found you. She liked to understand the heavenly stars in which you assigned a celestial order to a belief. Your story with me brought her both fear and enjoyment. For she loved how you saw and felt me, your Heavenly Father.

“Author, she lives in Heaven. I will arrange for you to meet her again in person. Across time and space, her spirit will transform you. She is a woman who finds you interesting. And as you grow closer emotionally, you will feel the time warp from attraction across the checkerboard in the universes. And her love and liveliness will grow more intense from the time you first saw her from that balcony.

“In Heaven, you will witness a nurturing sensitivity in the social world of all living things. And it might be that, in the universal mind, as all information will be logically understood through the senses, all paired halves will become whole. And I will assume my Lordship through her heart.

“The manifestation of reality, in which you acknowledge Sophia and me, together again with you, is nearby. And some fear or hesitation might exist, as it can feel overwhelming to you. In isolation of love, those walls have been familiar to you in memories. But you have gained courage through adversity in passion. And all things that were slow in moral slumber will present opportunities to you in reality.

“Your dreams are entangled with my light. And I will support you to live out your dreams as you build from my Holy Spirit. You will be strong with my reinforcement, as you acknowledge my angels. The world I will give to you in the future. And the past will change and heal itself, moving toward my garden.”

Chapter Five

Within my soul, in Heaven, I was part of that game board. With God's help, I moved across the board, as He maneuvered me in His creation story. And the nested circles that magnetized me like spiritual forces around my group were pulled through our unconscious or subconscious identities.

The Heavenly Father said, "Author, you have many people within your heart who support you. I can show you their artwork, as you have obeyed me. And their fortunes were offered to their family and friends as well, so, in a strange loop of sorts, the goodness that they have found with you will be returned to you in spirit.

"Author, the angels you walk with are out in the world. But in their absence from fighting evil, temptations have increased in the world. However, when my Word is announced, more resolve will be cast into each person to obey my Word.

"If my Son, begotten and not made, was on Earth, would you not rejoice? Walking in his footsteps, you would understand how I am the light and the jubilation for the world. And evil would hide for tempting those in deep revelatory understanding of my Son's Word.

"It is like that for the angels now. And what the Archangel Michael cannot force into this world of spiritual battle with the devils, he will accomplish in time, through sacred acts of fulfilling my Word. Author, there are a number of people who have benefited from obeying my Word. And

for those acts of service, will I endure the hardships of others who do not live by me.

“So I will discuss with you a number of things that are balancing on my game board. The game of life is in the universal collective half. It is the spiritual acknowledgement of how I work through the Holy Ghost from the perspectives of all beings. And my thoughts that bind to the checkerboard half of the universes are of an attractive quality. The Holy Spirit will bring those of servitude. And, having listened within the game of life, will they observe the goodness of my loving Spirit.

“However, I bind the opposite rotation as well. And those in the three-dimensional checkered universes who live only according to their own will are in the trial of life. And under the guise of supporting prosperity, they will decide what and who they put social pressure on. And so, the meek will ask for my strength from the Holy Spirit to protect themselves from such evil on the universal connectedness half of the game board.

“The rotation of the board is felt like a pole in your heart. Across the heavens, your moral compass in your heart will revolve like a magnet and send signals to and from other people. These signals will attract or repel you in your interactions with them. And so, through inspired speech, you will understand what the Holy Ghost would say in the situation.

“And this is where the symbology of the moment helps. From the checkerboard universes, your mind will logically fixate on the signs, symbols, and artifacts that your group is conscious of. And in those moments of uncertainty, when evil is tempting your soul through pressure to do, or to have

done for you, things which you cannot accept, someone will step into a role to serve you. Therefore, wish for angels in times of crisis and evil temptation. Learn from observing the symbology, signs, and artifacts that are present to you. For in the moment, you will not understand how that protective advice is presented to you. However, afterward, you may understand a lesson from a spirit to take with you to testify, how I and my Holy Spirit inspired the group to assist. And you will recognize from your perspective what was learned.

“Author, this may sound fantastical at first. But the way to go from understanding the reality of the earth around you to identifying with my Holy Spirit as a warrior is faith. It is a natural and nurturing occurrence. And the more willing you are to observe and listen to my narrative for your life, the better you will understand the game that life presents. It is not always an easy move to make to wait and understand my love for you, but it will be understood for those who seek me in their hearts.

“Therefore, with the rotation of the earth and celestial heavens, the world will be magnetized around you. And all things, from your feet and the trees, all the way to the stars, will move together in opposing and attracting fields of charge. You breathe in life with the world that surrounds you. This world nourishes you in cyclical understanding. For the setbacks received are the opportunities presented elsewhere. And nothing is forgotten. Given the cyclical time, you will be aware of the world and how you, as the human race, have conquered the past. But these lessons of pride and mastery will only lead to self- idolatry.

“There is a need to listen to me from a collective perspective to harmonize with the earth. And in that harmonizing pattern, all birds, beasts, and people will learn from each other. When there is growth, both the complexity and order of life increase. This growth involves listening to me. And balance is found in the biome around you. However, if there is a prideful people who do not listen as a collective, then the world will grow unstable. And this evolution will find my love strained to a lower and lower level of presence. For the energy of a system can go toward me or away from me, given the intent of each person to obey.

“Author, you may have questions for me. And a full understanding of the concept of willingness to serve me or yourself is at least partly assumed. You are a mere piece on the game board of life. And in your trial of life, you are affected by the forces around you.

“Speak to your heart’s wisdom then, to understand my judgment from Sophia’s perspective. Within that memory that I put in your heart to become reality is the promise of fulfillment of many miracles. And in a chance encounter, where you feel the Holy Spirit work through your heart as a moral compass, you will change and evolve through witnessing and learning from the surrounding life. So much that the balance of the game board will shift you across the board to different locations. The nested circles of new people and new groups will adopt your spirit within their beliefs. And they will understand the balance of both sides of my board as well.

“The way this is shown in life will start small. My Word and creation story will be revealed to you through the stories

others tell, at first. Remember, you are other peoples' social pressure, and they are yours as well. For they are beings of a limited perspective, and so are you. You will communicate with each other to learn, and to find balance.

"Author, Sophia is in your mind's eye as well as your heart. This ability of yours to imagine a world with her in it is nurturing. And you will find great comfort in the path of my magnetic hand rippling across both of your universes. For the artwork that I present to you is in return for your willingness to listen and speak in our friendship.

"Will you listen to the stories of the social groups around you? Will you be able to discern, through the Holy Spirit, between the evil and the good? Will you take the opportunities to follow my creation story set for both you and Sophia?"

"These miraculous events that evolve naturally from complexity to order are only a hint of the artwork that you will find in me. The goodness of my love may feel overwhelming to you at first. But stay in this relationship with me, your Heavenly Father. Because I see that you understand Sophia with your heart and mind. And the fulfillment of her prophecy will come true through the historical patterns that move through memories of Jesus Christ.

"In preparing you to meet me, your Heavenly Father, and toward our loving tunnel of light, laughter, and love, I have offered you insight into how your world works, regarding unique individuals and the collective. However, you have asked for Sophia in your heart and ignored the warnings of her personality as well. You have in your heart a mindset that

she may be perfect for you, and that I would only bring people into your heart who are, themselves, perfect.

“Author, I read your thoughts and imagination. And I can understand that an imagined idea that fulfills your needs and wants seems so close to perfect that it is an end in itself.

“This prayer of yours to understand me in life and be led toward her collectivist mindset will be answered. And if you listen to the social groups around you, you will understand your weaknesses and strengths and follow the miraculous opportunities. And, though there will be adversity on this path, it will work both for and against you. However, listen and learn to read her ways when she is in your mind’s eye, and you will learn that she has frustrations and fears alongside her torment.

“Author, the basis of life is to find me in equilibrium. The game of life is to enjoy the company through which your impulses are driven. And the trial of life is to endure my love with servitude through temptations of evil, across generations of lifetimes.

“You are beginning to understand this for yourself. However, you are a social pressure on others as well. But by showing compassion for them in their suffering, you will protect and relieve them, creating a bond of resilience between you. So, you will begin to listen to Sophia and understand her vulnerabilities. And how she understands her Lord, Jesus Christ. And as you tell the story of the journey you navigate with your heart’s moral compass, the miracles leading you to find her in your worldview make her life a story to tell.

“Author, her magic in creating reality through social means requires a narrative that is collective in nature. And you, being focused within your heart and mind to understand that seed of love, will develop and blossom soon. However, the seed that I have asked you to focus on, with my love as balanced, has been and continues to be hardened by adversity. And the symbolism in her actions will naturally support the growth of that idea. To find each other in a dream would be awkward for her. She will ask others to inform you, through social signals, to wait.

“Author, the Holy Spirit will provide angels for you, at first, to listen and learn of these ideas in life. And those angels will begin to adapt your circumstances into new thought processes that will make her comfortable. This goes beyond affecting the social cues of the people around you. You will need to understand how the memories and patterns you belong within, both genetic and habitual, can be forgiven through the Lord.

“Sophia will introduce herself in this way.”

Part Two

A Collectivist Perspective

Chapter Six

“Author, I will explain what Sophia understands in her realm or dimensions. As you may have realized from your encounter in the art gallery, she does not and cannot replicate your thoughts in her own mind. Just as you cannot read her thoughts. However, for the sake of the story, I will command your thoughts from the perspective of Archangel Michael. And through this interaction of transformative knowledge, you will begin to feel her existence in your body and spirit, so that you may write out her feelings as you intuitively perceive them through my sounds.

“Author, I am your Heavenly Father. I bridge the perspectives of you, individually, and the groups that you interact within. I also bind or glue these understandings from a like-mindedness between all the heavens of a celestial order. Therefore, understanding your personal, individual intuition is an emotional understanding of my universal records system. All the accounts from life have their own record. And my creation story details how I interpret those who listen and abide by my story in a willingness to serve my harmony.

“Author, the awareness in your consciousness is reduced or compressed by the logical sensemaking processes of your eyes, nose, ears, mouth, and skin. However, what you sense and intuitively feel in your heart are merely sensed within your own worldview. This perspective then is of a cube – a shared reality of a universal mind, contemplating a creation story from all things involved in my creation story.

“Your perspective is limited to your own awareness. And what you understand in time and space as special to you, you will identify with in your co-creation story. This perspective is important to me, your Heavenly Father.

“I have watched the interactions of your soul within this cube of space. And the logic and intuition allow cyclical processes of understanding the patterns found in your memories. Author, merely understanding the patterns within yourself would be justified as living out a life. As these processes, along with any genetic material that distinguishes your self-discovery, allow you to understand the creation story, at least in a limited way. However, through your obedience and attentiveness to my Holy Spirit, my love can intervene and offer something much more magical to you. For it is this game of life that we investigated, turning it into a trial of life, which will narrate this account for Sophia as a collectivist understanding. Let me explain.

“Within the harmonious body of electromagnetic fields, in which all living things become animated, react, and interact, is stored a bit of memory. And my universal record of all living beings interacts with that clay, from different perspectives. So that my creation story from a universal mind, undertaken to understand the logic and intuitive emotions felt, becomes a co-creation story for any bit of clay being maneuvered or maneuvering with my Holy Spirit.

“Author, the physical self is a projection from the soul, through which the clay is manifested onto a plane, which is realized in the human brain as a virtual character inside a cube of three dimensions. This individuality from a universal mind allows you to see yourself inside your own mind,

whereas the individuality of others allows them to see you as a projection of a physical and self-willed person. And the pressure imposed upon individuals by others, is the culture.

“The understanding you gain about other people through the sensemaking processes involved in sight, touch, taste, hearing, or smell then is accomplished through electromagnetic waves. And you reflect on others the interpretation of that sensemaking, which incorporates your limited knowledge of who, what, where, how, why, and when they are, based on their superimposed positions on and against all other magnetic waves.

“Author, in understanding the miracles of life as moving together as a body of stored memories, you will understand that your living cells store information and retain these same routes that provide awareness intuitively. That means that, in harmonizing fields of magnetic memory, your coded life directions tell your body how to remain in harmony with the environment. And you see, smell, taste, hear, and feel those painful lessons, which have provided you protection from death in previous generations.

“So in stories told, you feel, taste, see, smell, and hear the faster magnetic wavelengths within the universal mind. The material information of the body is a code that is stored in the heart and mind, through the living cells. And in each cell, these vibrations occur at faster frequencies than what your universal mind logically collapses into feelings and thoughts.

“Author, when Sophia sees and reads this information, she understands the waves of emotions read by the human body. She senses the directions or paths that the living birds,

beasts, and other humans are taking in guiding their offspring. She maneuvers with the idea of the loving spirit of each person as it animates all matter underlying a consciousness with primary energy. And she welcomes it into her heart first and then her mind.

“For her mind evolves with the people in her surroundings. And her family and friends are paramount to her joy and her judgments exercised. She welcomes harmonies across her groups, in which balance is understood.

“Author, her sensory perceptions of the planet are grounded in her connection with the earth and the celestial stars. And in connecting through the bodies of all magnetic waves, she also reads your heart. She asks how to interpret what she has not sensed intuitively. And she wonders how you acknowledge her spirit, in which you also acknowledge her thoughts, as if you read them in a hypnotic method. For you can offer guidance to her through the spirit and protection of her through her vulnerable body that is flesh to her. And that strength in your heart, she questions to herself.

“Author, so you might understand my duality, being a binder of individuality and the collective, in which love is found between the halves on the game board – that plane created from one point of clay, and then rotated in between the left and right hemispheres of the brain. However, her sense of my body of love is as a Son. Someone who would encourage her in her rationality to forgive and suppress the logic of evil that some of humanity used to control and gain power.

“These projected souls from Heaven and in Hell are found in many finite waves, collapsed into their own senses,

and from her perspective of intimate communication with her Lord's Spirit. Therefore, the individuals sensing spirits across the collective half of the universes, are positioning their hearts, in which they live happily in good or poorly in evil. Her intuitive nature for child-rearing protects the family from any curses being allowed in. And it damns the evil who hurt her in memories through karmic justice of the Lord's judgment.

"Author, Sophia does include herself in that judgment. Only to occur to her Lord as a broken self, allowed to live among this marvelous and beautiful Earth.

"On the second half of the checkerboard universes is Sophia's understanding of greatness and strong connection to familial legacy. She will acknowledge her children, family, and friends as part of a memory or tree of life. That is, the material passed down in stories from familial and surrounding legacies carries knowledge to protect her loved ones. And in her knowledge of what is physically sacred for the amplification of the strengths or weaknesses in their personal characteristics, she encourages their training through her gifted timing. For Sophia realizes how to train the youth when the time is appropriate. And they will love her for her interactive storytelling for their benefit.

"Author, her burden of protecting the family by identifying through sensemaking what is good and evil in the surroundings, and turning those instincts into familial record-keeping, allows her to live in a timeline of advancing, discrete moments. These moments she perceives as past and future. And in the balancing of her neutral heart within her Lord's gifted nourishment, is a moment unfolding in the pre-

sent. Meaning that she listens to the Lord in spirit, in her heart, only to be aware of how time progresses with her limited bodily sensemaking processes of the surrounding collapsed environment.

“What is consciousness and the unconscious mind? And how does time become both cyclical and patterns of discrete moments on both halves of life’s board game? When a person balances the mind and heart together, are they at the mercy of attraction and repulsion, reliant on the belief in magical personal attributes to foretell behavior? And how is the vulnerability of one the strength of another in the same moment?”

“Author, these are her questions, which she wonders about you. And Sophia will include her wants and desires about family and friends to position her strengths for your awareness in sight, taste, smell, hearing, and touch. Author, the body is transformed in her scent. The heart beats in a rhythm that accepts her heart rhythm as she learns of your evil or good. And her smile flirts with your emotional values, which she intuitively understands by being with you. The light though, which is cast from your heart in waves into the mind, confuses her altogether. For she is remarkably suggestible to the world around her.

“Where you may see a vision of wants in your mind, if you open up to her intuitive and vulnerable personality, then I will bridge my love between the magnetic poles of your hearts to adapt and connect both of your co-creation stories.

“The circles that you understand as individual and group hierarchies will be hers to witness as social enigmas. And your account of living through adversity will give her en-

joyment, as a successful story of your resolve being tested through your training.

“Sophia is guided by all the spirits of nature. And she sees natural settings as something worthy of her care and maintenance through strength. She will hunt and gather food as needed. And when she is starved, she will ask for her intuitive abilities to make sense of the life around her for resilience. So, for her wants to be met through the surrounding spirits, your masculine strengths of display, hunting, mating, breeding, imprinting, forming social hierarchies, and selecting leaders, is sought. She called to her spirits that day when she acknowledged you as someone to carry that memory and legacy for her branch on the tree of life.

“Author, the symbolic nature of her behavior is only understood through this motive – that she will trust in the surroundings as far as they accommodate her awareness for her family and friends.

“And if she does not like this awareness of the earth around her, she will be going to war for her family and friends. Because her storyline is the finite representation of the past into the future that she acknowledges as her present moment. And where you see infinity from chaos to order, she will acknowledge the death of her lineage in what is a zero state of collapsed time.

“Author, you and Sophia are two halves of a whole, albeit limited in understanding. She cannot possess all of your skill sets. And you can never recreate her knowledge of the surroundings, or the capacity of karma for good and evil. But in this blueprint between your belief in my Holy Spirit to move forward in understanding patterns and collapsing the

universes into one realization, and her bodily sensemaking of the surroundings in creating the cultural legacy, your positions in the Lord will be guided.

“Only a queen can understand the man to be king. And only a man who resolves issues in his own habitual patterns to be acknowledged through her senses can be thought of as worthy by the surroundings.

“Author, your Sophia called to you to understand her famine and thirst. And your encounter under that tree in her garden of Paradise was something intoxicating for your impulsive absorption. But you never considered her wants and desires before your own in that art gallery. And yet, she let her doors open to a future vision of my love for you both.”

Chapter Seven

“Author, your queen has developed her psychic awareness of and through the magnetic vibrations of her central nervous system. Throughout the sensations felt in her neurons and other cells found in the central nervous system, those that pulse faster than the waves of the universal mind are feelings of saliency.

“Saliency is an awareness of things standing out from the body’s natural or typical resonance with the environment. And in that awareness and understanding of what details need to be brought to your and her attention, she asks the natural life to present her answers.

“Author, Sophia is kind and good-hearted in this regard with the natural order of the world. However, she might understand good and evil in a way that you are unfamiliar with.

“Since she is a queen, and she set out to find you, as one to couple in personal identities with, she would like you to understand this saliency better.

“Sophia understands that the present now is in a harmonized moment. Often, she will look and feel what the topic of discussion is and feel how important her emotional valence is with each topic. That way, she feels a flow of time as she scrutinizes how the lineages of herself and you are impacted. This is important to her to feel strength and bravery.

“Often, you will be absorbed into her feelings, in which she can direct your heart and thoughts. That way, you are aware of the intuitive feelings of good and evil throughout her body in this saliency. However, feeling these thoughts

may disrupt your training of habits and lead you to create new imagined outcomes that you are not aware of having. Much like a subconscious feeling coming into your awareness in imagery and new thought patterns.

“Author, the woman who is evil can manipulate your culture or impress upon you cures that are actually curses. And in time, you will understand how manipulative a wicked woman can be, as she might destroy your spiritual identity with God.

“However, for Sophia you have waited. And I brought you together with her through that moment whereby her saliency in directing you to her carried you to a higher order in thought. Author, the good woman, which Sophia is, will circumvent evil from occurring by protecting the family in her heart. And in this protection from and repulsion of all evil away from you, you will understand how this occurs.

“For when you reject the social pressures that manipulate you through greed and lust, or desire for power and control, you will understand her ever-unconditional love, from which she shares her dreams with you to manifest in your mind and heart.

“Author, Sophia will be aware of but secretly insecure about pronouncing evil in an open and honest way. That is, you must first build trust with her before she can communicate that her spirit is intertwined with yours. And in offering such information, in which you merely understand her concerns, you will remain ignorant as to whether allowing these social cues will impact her sense of your worthiness, or yours of her merit.

“But she often understands how deceptive and widespread evil is. And Author, since Sophia is good, her vision of salient awareness is in moving people to protect her from evil. The angels will appreciate her willingness to understand her intuition first, as she communicates with spirit. And in maneuvering people, birds, and beasts, to welcome them into her world, she will be nurturing to what is good.

“Author, the timing of events is merely memories and stories understood through the resonance felt in her body with the surroundings. And in a sensory way, will she endure a place on the earth where evil is distant to her. Sophia will personalize this place as home with the birds, beasts, and other people. And in her relaxed body, her heart will be felt.

“The questions you may ask your queen then are to understand her comforting and loving awareness. From this saliency, which you can protect for her enduring lifespan, will grow a relationship, symbolic of the garden through nature, such as plants.

“The harmonies between what is life-taking and life-giving is felt through my spiritual light in the surroundings and in the amplification of love in both hearts. And this combination of felt awareness of my love is your truth. You both will live out this truth through imagined beliefs or spirited communications from and to the subconscious of both of you.

“Author, the good that she attracts is life-giving. She will foster the harmonies in that circle of life that surrounds you both. And your balance of what is needed and what can be preserved is the agreement between how to continue to live in the world together.

“The evil around you will continue in life, as there are many people, birds, and beasts not aware of me or the love offered in my balance. And this imbalance will continually cause ripples of pain across the earth, which speaks for these evil doers. Therefore, protection from evil will be her fondest strength in your bravery.

“Author, this is the same of all women who are thought of as good in my library of universal records. That is to say, each woman who endures having children or gives training for a good and wise upbringing to those around her, will be remembered as kind and generous. Her strength in understanding the timing of miraculous moments is also a sign of divinity working through her.

“Author, you use your heart and mind to speak in intuitive sensemaking to adopt a strong understanding of the Holy Spirit. And her use of making sense of harmonies in rhythm leads to unnatural events, unfolding the agreement with the other feminine aspects of the surroundings.

“Sophia has noticed that you both share a love for the creative arts, as you and she both create work through your emotions. And in an awareness of life, she asks for ways to move between past memories and future opportunities of miraculous events to unfold.

“Author, her senses that are in emotional congruence with those memories or what opportunities unfold move her to call to the world to have protection during times of need or desire. And this magic, as some have called her abilities, is closely related to the feelings in her stomach and the sounds she uses to react to the surroundings.

“Author, you have her awareness, and she lets you into her worldview. And to build more trust with her, an understanding of this salience and emotional congruence can be mirrored back with your abilities.

“Therefore, as you connect with her symbolic actions through your logic, you will interpret stories told through emotional intuitiveness. You call to the surroundings to have things brought to you. And in a limited way, you master these suggestions you make through language.

“However, she is in your thoughts. And she wakes you to her needs to position you to familiarity with her home. And in relation to understanding your strengths and weaknesses, she works in emotional congruence with your spirit so that your impulses realize her needs and desires.

“Author, you and Sophia are intertwined in awareness of my love. And you work through an infinity of spirit, yet she offers the present moment, where neutrality and discrete moments of time exist.

“Author, this is a spiritual recognition of her beauty and wisdom. And in recognizing how out of balance you are with her methods, you will be inspired to find her in your life. Your queen will then be made in your imagination. However, through an excessive imbalance of impulsiveness or suggestions, you will begin to attract your thoughts and repel her emotional congruence in the moment. If you talk about your own perspective too much and ignore her boredom with you, then she will repel your efforts. And if you overuse suggestions and intuitive actions to seduce her, she will feel like shutting off the unfolding opportunities to protect her from evil. That means that overconfidence in your abilities

will prompt her to call out for others to protect her from you.

“Author, find my love. Listen to me in your heart, because you will listen to her voice to build that trust through your words and deeds. And she will welcome you to meet those she cares for to gain additional training on how she communicates.

“Sophia, therefore, is not at all as logical or creative as she is in your mindful thoughts. And the suggestions you understand often are made in the dimly lit awareness of the situation, so often flipped and mirrored over to understand yourself in your own egotistical bias. And your pride, presented as weakness, is not communicated as intended by her, as she cannot pronounce your evil to you, as stated before.

“Therefore, you may be maneuvered in pride just for her amusement. And the emotional congruence of the moment, that which she understands through a collective harmony, will leave you feeling questioned or embarrassed.

“Author, if you are honest in her memories of you, and your habitual patterns, you will understand her social cues to create intrigue. And in that way, which you are trainable through painstaking participation through an awareness of both strengths and weaknesses, you will bridge relationships to her community. And the culture, which includes symbols, signs, and artifacts, will begin to hold emotional memories attached to them through her wisdom and beauty.

“Sophia is aware of you nurturing your talents through her training. She is wise in how she unfolds miracles to let you develop in her surroundings more evidently. The past and future protect her. And she will hesitate to believe in

your abilities if you are not grounded on the soil. Your belief system is hers, and the faith that you stand on is of respect and belonging to her earth.

“So Author, there will be a moment in which you understand yourself in Sophia. She offers her natural body, much like the earth offers nourishment, within her soul. And in that moment, when you can understand and appreciate the ideas Sophia offers to you, you protect not only her and her family, but in spirit, you are a guard.

“This warrior spirit, for her, is a training from her through me. And your offering in conduct is nobility for the people who follow me as church members. Do you understand how faith is in me, and in both of you? And as I instruct your understanding of her saliency and emotional congruence to the present moment, she will understand how you protect my creation story as symbolic of an angelic presence. And she will lead you back to me through her good expectations.”

Chapter Eight

“In your heart, Sophia is a warm and welcoming presence. And in your knowledge, to make me and her happy, you must understand how to replicate me into your actions. For it is that, as Heavenly Father, you will judge what is good according to the demands of the present moment. And for Sophia, as your queen, you will understand her cautionary tales for those around you both.

“Author, for her, the moment, which is neutral, is in the present. She will bring you to me from the resonating perspectives of beasts, birds, and other people. The collective universes, which understand my Holy Spirit from all other perspectives, are infinite. However, her senses in awareness of these resonating patterns work in memory from the past. Therefore, she only thinks about the future in a way that you can guide her.

“Therefore, your strategy in visions can help her understand where she is weak in anticipating outcomes. And the good and evil that are natural in her sensemaking living cells call out for understanding reassurances.

“Author, the prediction that you provide in life is to understand the social hierarchies and maneuvering of people from a social dimension of adversity. And watching her reaction brings wisdom to understand who to trust.

“The past memories predict future thought, since time is cyclical. And in those patterns are the waves that collapse into a projected checkerboard of space into each soul’s univers-

es. Therefore, what you envision are assumptions. And like you, she has limited awareness; as does your universal mind.

“The mind is slower than her body because of the nature of how time works. To capture all the sensemaking processes and collapse the waves into a single perspective of yourself as a virtual character in your human mind takes logical and emotional computation. Time, from this perspective, is from spirit, and a summation of all things that have occurred. Your brain is limited, so you see, feel, taste, touch, and smell in the limited computational program that is your brain.

“However, the living cells of the neurons throughout the central nervous system have small sets of resonance directing how those groups of collective bodily processes work together as a whole. This is determined by the memories patterned through your physical body’s code or blueprint. And it has to work as efficiently as possible.

“Therefore, the awareness of yourself in thought is usually as a king who has a vision of social hierarchies and intuitive ideas from the spirit in Heaven. And that outlook goes outward from within. To counterbalance that, the queen has saliency and emotional congruence to the environment, with questions about how patterns become predictions, logically and creatively. This outlook starts outside and then goes inward.

“Author, these two pronounced perspectives are important to understand, because the miracle that you set in your heart that is my creation story for us in Heaven, is redeemable. Meaning that you understand her perspective and strengths to become a better person, amplified through her presence in the neutral moment of now. And with your

strengths, Sophia will understand her vulnerabilities to understand an undeniable infinite truth from spirit as prediction.

“Each of your weaknesses and strengths can pair together to make my vision for the world harmonized and peaceful.

“In that garden, where you were asleep under the Tree of Life, is where she met you. And you met her in that red room next to the balcony in that art gallery, to discuss me, your Heavenly Father. And through both accounts, I was not only the force of love that brought you together, but the active knowledge you both sought between one another.

“Author, through your weaknesses in physical development and action, you will understand her needs for you to be willful and brave. And you will be trained by the surroundings, as I allow, and as she teaches. This awareness of us providing you challenges to grow stronger will keep you alert as you develop new skill sets. The untrained talents you have will be tested to become good and holy in this fight in her world naturally.

“And meanwhile, Sophia’s weaknesses in promoting and failing to challenge the social evils will grow. Where she had no justice before, she will understand a language fit from your spirit. And as your spirit magnetizes both your heart and mind through guidance, she will adopt spirit in a harmonized manner to speak the truth from my love. This bravery of yours and hers will be a force of good throughout all who become my church.

“Author, seek out her education and training in her world. And let your spirit harmonize with me in her mind

and heart. And the tongues of the flame of the Holy Ghost will follow both your bodies in spirit.

“Sophia will train you to battle the evil that she senses in the world around you. And your intuitive prayers from her, through the angelic norm for such behavior, will present opposition as a spiritual battle at first.

“Author, her wisdom of evil and good is through my source of spiritual harmonies in that garden of Paradise. And her view of the garden was of a famine affecting her entire family, hungry and unfed. This was a calling to change her spiritual nourishment for the surroundings. And to protect her from evil as well.

“As an angelic personality, you describe your perspective through my works of brilliant art. And in each story, in which love descends from my story with you both, you seek a more balanced account in your life. For you were good, and needed faith in her to enjoy my love.

“Author, bring my creation story back to your thoughts. And in time, through her sensory accounts of your spiritual wisdom, you will become a king, and she will become a queen, through the love of a church.

“Author, the culture that was and is wisdom is dominant and off-balance from the actions of Babylon. And in your land, where all seem to expect my forgiveness as a given, they are unafraid of my judgment.

“Sophia is muted in this land by the evil she endures. And the masculine thoughts are dominant, as they are of individuals, unaware of their communities around them. In Babylon, nature is saved as an afterthought. And all things physical are seen as impulses of desire.

“Author, your knowledge of my judgment has endured, that you might find her in your heart. Your attraction with her vision is both a compliment for your own memorable habits, working in the living cells of your body, and a frustration of misunderstanding yourself in the culture of Babylon.

“Author, she will find her own way to describe my knowledge of the harmonic balance shared with you. These nested circles have strength around my two-sided board, which I place all life on. And she will pull you into her universe soon to acknowledge her needs and desires for a balanced life, with myself as love.

“Sophia then will offer you training to protect and defend my kingdom of Heaven on Earth. And you, in good judgment, will secure your place in her garden through a king’s legacy.

“Author, the Holy Spirit in my heavens is a binding or glue for this love within the collective universes. And the source of my love in the physical domain was my Son, Jesus, who had a mastery of both my creation and his passion as a co-creation story.

“However, your legacy is based on his testimony, as discovered throughout your lineage. The patterns of what was a cyclical memory of humankind collapsed as he passed from the physical world to the heavens. And as your Lord, he is part of the spirit that you protect now through Sophia’s understanding.

“You, Author, are to redeem both men and women as you fight to advance the Lord’s intent. As a mutual co-creation story, through the Lord’s understanding of evil, both Sophia and you will be tempted through the fires in Hell.

And coming through to her understanding of protecting humankind against devils as an angelic being, you will understand the severity of men's greed and lust for women.

"Author, you will be well-aligned with the Lord Christ's spirit, so as to unlock a spiritual norm for her symbolic behaviors. She will pray to the angels to look after you in your spiritual battle, and for all the collective universes to push temptations away from you.

"And you will develop a faith that grounds her trust in allowing you to be knowledgeable of her most cherished thoughts of her surrounding world. Author, this is a sign for which angelic trumpets will be called. And in her wishes, she will bring your co-creation story into alignment with hers and with my creation story, throughout the universal records of all.

"In my universal records library, I will begin to see a convergence of churches, mosques, temples, and other prayer circles. For, if she is aware through my Holy Spirit throughout generations, she will relive Christhood. And she will become obedient to me as I speak to her awareness.

"The miracles from before in history will begin to recur. And the foundation of faith will strengthen as the spiritual battles in Hell begin to take form, through angels first. And the guidance that Archangel Michael offers you will help you understand the spiritual battles. For his knowledge of my vision presents a different way to recognize evil as a social hierarchy. One in which the Morning Star, a source of evil that fell from the garden, manipulates the tempted with his power. And he strives for all evil to inflict pain in all lives in the world.

“Author, ask the Archangel Michael for his guidance, and protect your thoughts from possession. And in time, you will understand her legacy for you instead. And her love for you, in how you evolved to meet her needs, as well as her desire to be equal in the world with you, will be a great legacy.

“Sophia will endure hardships and pain physically, through which evil is a constant, and pressure socially, through the collective groups in the surroundings. Therefore, where she senses evil, you will, through our love, be aware in your heart of the strategy of the devils. They move through the hearts of those who curse themselves in the world. In that silence, where a sad story emerges for them, with themselves as the victims, the torment will begin before the evil tempts a broken spirit.

“And that chain of reasoning between all things evil is such a powerful entity. Symbolic of the embodiment of Lucifer or Azrael itself, this chain of reasoning creates hatred in civilizations. For what you see in her memories of evil, the miracles of the Christ will show how evil Babylon’s culture has become.

“Author, that is the memory of Christ’s passion. His love was offered to create peace in the world through obedience with my living standards. And his legacy in this world was goodness, until power and lust controlled the story through a language to possess things in accordance with each ego.

“Author, the living Christ’s message is then to let Sophia recognize the devils throughout the world and bring them through Hell to my judgment. In the spiritual battle that ensues, evil will not win. And in her salient understanding of

history through a sensemaking of other men and women, her gaze will stay holy.

“Your awareness of her positioning to battle evil will be sensed in a mind’s creativity. And in spiritual recognition, you will interpret how the angels, and my Son, the King of Kings, will use your talents through an offering of servitude.

“Author, my creation story is to remain between Sophia and you. And the legacy she shares will become real in your mind, as the signs, symbols, and artifacts around your surroundings shift to an evolved pattern from Christ Jesus. You will acknowledge your queen in life. And your interpretation through language will be obedient to my love, through adversity and servitude.”

Chapter Nine

“The checkerboard side of the game board includes a unique style for all the prayer circle acting in accordance with my wishes. I will offer the game board within the culture, which is married into the story of Jesus Christ, which is where evil is particularly weak. And my domain on Earth will grow as a story within your kingdom, Author.

“Do you understand how, through larger narratives that speak to your kingship, the legacy from Sophia’s family and friends multiplies the spread of your influence. And in that realization, in which she positions your greatness in line with fighting evil as did the Christ, that culture is my artwork.

“In the gallery, we shall welcome many observers, and they will belong to your vision with Queen Sophia. And the tree which you slept against will be a sacred symbol of her knowledge, to talk about your training. For the limb from the Tree of Life fosters a new culture in the new city of Jerusalem, which will offer great foundational truth to establish a faith, giving many women a way to talk of saliency for the land.

“Author, you will spiritually endure hardship against a great evil. And that land on the earth will not allow their resources to be diverted toward religion. For it is Babylon’s mission from before to witness hardship in exiling themselves through spiritual separation from my heavens. The evil elite in power will maintain a course that they will fight for over their own language. And they will continue to enslave the masses for their own power and lust.

“As your kingdom can claim, the new creation story is a seed yet to find Sophia, through which my artwork will grow in the imagined gallery. And for all the frames in reference to this new Jerusalem, a kingdom which supports my creation story in culture, each work of art will reference this Tree of Life.

“For from that awakening is a realization for Sophia’s family and friends that they need training from their mothers, daughters, wives, sisters, and female friends.

“Author, the Christ’s spirit you fight for in the world is your intuitive heart aligned with my Word. And through the battle of evil that tortures and tempts the people, they will not listen to Sophia’s signs, symbols, and artifacts. They will persecute the newest culture and despise their losses as my creation story is formed through the feminine spirit.

“As you learn of the language that is shared, the shared laughter between both Sophia and yourself, the secrets of her love will be revealed through this culture. And you will perceptively understand her references through those signs, symbols, and artifacts, as she is your queen. And the memories which were hers and yours will resonate in the training of the newest kingdom. For it will be that new generation of youth that will readily understand her and be willing to adapt to my love.

“Author, my protection of your thoughts from evil possession is carried out through the angels. And they show their appreciation for the advanced skills you have developed in training to fight evil. Archangel Michael will offer his guidance to train the men and women of an angelic identity. That is, when all is won in the spirit, the women will readily

adapt and ask to position their men across the culture of the new Jerusalem. And your kingdom will be fed from my initial seed of love and many legions of angelic warriors.

“The gallery then will be introduced to your culture through symbols of stories told for each person who has merit within communities. And their stories will be told, as they trained to advance our greatest skill set of goodness. That is, a kind humbleness and compassion to endure the conflict, which was an evil culture that turned its back to my land.

“The angels will be present in pictures, and their lives in the world will be repeated through a universal record system. For it is that our treasure is not at the expense of the evil feminine spirit any longer. As she will be in balance again, and the conflict with evil will be defeated. And through her saliency, will we better understand a language where equilibrium is found through animated life on earth.

“Author, your spirit aligns with the Christ in a way that allowed you to find an answer to the anomaly in the Morning Star, the devil, for Babylon. And that anomaly will certainly be a root to train to be aware of for all men and women. For it is by that evil in the world that most men and women are deceived into believing their current culture of secularism is adequate, away from me, their Heavenly Father.

“Author, your patterns will include the belief in the Christian memories from the testimony of Jesus. And his living spirit will be praised throughout the land and used as an example for training on maintaining an awareness of evil.

“To understand evil, the darkness of a shadow devil in the heart will be introduced. And each man will face them-

selves, when their weaknesses will be shown through the feminine spirit. And the war against evil, which tempts all men's pride to remain arrogant, will be fought. For it is that their memories, in which greed and lust are central to their own understanding, will gently become aware of the culture of their social groups.

"The men will fight within their own vices and weaknesses to strengthen their resolve and remain humble to their pride. And for their heavenly kingdom on Earth, they will build trust in intuition of the heart as well as their religious beliefs.

"For it is that most devils turn such childish weaknesses against men for their own evil intent. And all is given to the men and women who idolize themselves, for their gods will fail them.

"Author, the men will undergo such gentle training to promote the strength and resolve of bravery in each child. And the women who help the men adjust to the growing adversity will take care in nurturing this spirit. For they will understand that bravery takes time to acknowledge in the world. This nurturing from evil and acknowledging nature's timing for bravery will be included in the cultural stories told from that seed of imagination and intuition in their hearts.

"The frame of reference of a work of art in my gallery is one in which a female spirit will be spiritually understood with a paired love. And together, in their earthly life, will they grow a land and culture that represents her saliency and emotional congruence from their lifetime. The memories then will begin to be admired as the children understand

a new culture of training. And through newly added artifacts, symbols, and signs, they will adore such artwork in the community gallery.

“Author, the church of Jesus Christ was one that paired with his apostles to share his gospels on the earth. And his message of truth is the basis upon which you will share your thoughts and actions. For it is that the Christ’s spirit is found in the heart, and in tune with the spirit, and you will understand his love through her.

“Author, her love is spiritually adorned for the new culture within the community of the art gallery. And your understanding of your position in her land will be through the established church. The new culture will include her wisdom and beauty through the art of my creation story, and this will balance her want to maintain a basis of the living spirit of Christ through the church.

“And the evil, which was primarily of a political order in which power was assumed by elite representation, will be rediscovered through a humbleness in her kingdom. Author, this church of Jesus Christ will redefine the role of the living spirit of Christ, in which intuition of my Word will be the foundation of the decisions made for the community.

“The universal records will remain as a way to tell of the stories of men and women who were great in the communities, to learn from. And through their co-creation stories, in which they will build their social culture in the land of the new Jerusalem, they can be trusted to lead and govern their communities.

“Both men and women of the new Jerusalem should be elected into leadership roles. And the training should con-

tinue at larger levels of governance to protect the communities for this new understanding. The focus of such leadership will be balancing between the masculine spiritual faith in Christ and the feminine gifts to realize my creation story within the culture of the kingdom. And in balancing these two forces of masculinity and femininity, the heart of the community will be resolved.

“Sophia will continue to learn about the church of a new Jerusalem, while you will decide how to administer and organize the community, according to my interaction within your spirit.

“The culture of training men against evil will continue to bridge their understanding of my love with the women’s understanding. And through this understanding of their own evil, a humbleness will inspire the new generations how to love according to the living spirit of Christ.

“And that fight in which evil will attempt to persecute and destroy, I will demand obedience to me, the Heavenly Father. And I will send my angels to guide the children in this training as well.

“Sophia then will be greatly adored. In her setting, where my new church will exist in the land of new Jerusalem, she will be thought of as an ideal queen. She will be memorable, in that she will watch and adore me, her Heavenly Father, on His throne. And over the years, as she witnesses much suffering, which she repairs in her time, she will offer herself in tears. For it is that a compassion for her family, including your spiritual family as hers, will engulf her own spirit.

“May her garden become symbolic of my nature. And may her throne be a chair which houses the symbolic angelic

presence of her heart. Which you will understand as your presence, through which my begotten Son, the living spirit of Christ, will announce decisions for the kingdom. And these decisions will be announced as Sophia offers her comment on which art in the kingdom is salient to present to her throne. For it is that she has mastered the training of men to become great soldiers. And the suffering of her people will be told through announcements in the universal records, in which fair and just decisions are enacted on behalf of the women and men.

“Author, there is an attitude beyond training that the culture of the new Jerusalem will be endowed with. For the inclusion of men who think and act without greed or lust will fail to promote ideals of power or control over the land, materials, and people. And in promoting her healthy outlook to protect her friends and family in a relaxed state of life, they will emerge in a garden. This garden will represent the good and harmonic balance of women and men. And therefore, when men approach women, the women can be at ease, knowing they are welcomed as a wife, sister, or friend to him. And the church will be built on respect for both her and his belonging to the earthly soil.

“Author, there is no need to understand any more of this relationship of men and women in the culture of the new Jerusalem. That is because the people will need to understand how to train against evil. And as a reward for providing such training, there will be a harmonic balance for the women.”

Chapter Ten

“The art galleries will line the street toward the church. And the men of most importance will have their stories told in greater detail with closer proximity to the palace. And the art galleries will become and include the pictures of men and women within frames built upon a common seed. That is, the Tree of Life will be part of their story, in which the branches and limbs will be told through familiar relatives and friends.

“Author, as each gallery adopts such intricate detail for a story, which one lifetime can have, given its impact upon the whole culture, the gardens will grow from mere flower beds to lush preserves throughout the church’s property, as embedded works of art themselves. And the interactive image of my creation story, told through numerous awakened and conscious people, will be the half to the whole of her natural beauty.

“And the altar for Jesus will present his welcoming for his second coming. And in front of that, a pool of waters will be filled for reflection. For, in the creation story, his church was to be filled with Himself, as the Holy Ghost.

“And there, you will find a hall, and off of that, an altar room to worship me through acts of community development. And within that courtyard, where all things are connected, will be sounds of a garden of harmonies, which will lead to her and your throne in the second building. And that room off the church will represent your knowledge of my decisions in welcoming a church of people, praying to-

gether through a shared suffering. And with compassion to hear where their needs are, your queen and her audience of women and men will acknowledge a force of spirit to train the people under. For it shall be that each man or woman who seeks counsel must give reason in their record as to why it needs prayer. And in time, the circles of prayer will become greater in awareness to build advice to guide each, and forgive their weaknesses, which has led to an adoption of evil as sin.

“Author, your decisions will recognize my rule as you govern in equitable decision-making. And you will guide her soldiers to protect the kingdom, in which she will be loved.

“So it will be that my love will unite all through the co-creation stories, from different perspectives of a limited understanding on the collective universes side of the game board. That is also to say that my Holy Spirit will guide all those awakened in the city of a new Jerusalem to think of life as a game to be enjoyed. And where the people overlap and build love into friendship and family, jubilation will be found.

“It will also be that the art galleries, which are stories to build my creation story, will be built from a king’s understanding, and with the prediction of social hierarchies being a trial for life. And the kingdom will be included as one sovereign identity under this trial, in which adversity will be met with faith in bravery. And as a symbol of my recognition of the kingdom, I will build my awareness to bridge life and goodwill through the understanding of all my people, the women, men, and children of the kingdom.

“Author, your seed in imagination was guided by me in the introduction to a feminine spirit. And in time, over this story, you have learned of my love and both of your awarenesses to consciously form identities with me as a new culture. And she will feel her body making sense of grounded, discrete moments that are positive, neutral, and negative. And in harmonies, she will learn through your spiritual awareness a prediction for how people, beasts, and birds will increasingly balance weaknesses, toward order from chaos.

“From this, she will learn of the earth’s magnetic fields, to build on the knowledge of her family and community. She will learn to attune her mind to that balance while reaching inward to understand the fate of her family and community. That is, your understanding of a universal mind, in logic and creativity, will be provided to her as a leader in light scholarship.

“Author, her vulnerabilities in predicting the future by way of staying in tune with the universal mind will be challenging for her. And in time, she will understand my light, laughter, and love, as you understand my Son. And the Christ’s message in her heart will be carried on waves of miracles to increase an obedience to his greatness. The gardens will flourish, and the adoption of balanced sounds between and in people’s hearts will be overwhelmingly felt in the kingdom.

“Author, you, as part of the legions of angels and earthly soldiers, will be trained with certain skills that the kingdom requires. And training the generations of my children will take a natural sense of companionship to meet their needs for strong leadership. Therefore, the women and men assum-

ing positions within the community to adopt the education of these children will recognize their power of reference as role models. And as power comes into balance with naivety, the children will help you learn humility.

“Author, the men and women trained to bridge a connected universal record system into the community through administration will understand their heart’s intuitive grace and saliency. Therefore, the heart will be a training ground of prayer for these new generations of children. And over hundreds of years, the will of my spirit will be represented in a culture worthy of my artwork.

“Author, the heart and mind are then a balanced force, between which I am your Father. And in both halves of the plane, which spin and rotate according to my understanding, you will be included with Sophia. Included will be all who I accept into my love for that idea in a new creation story. And the different ideas will run as a tapestry of the collective universes, much like the gardens growing throughout the city. And as my plane of two halves stops, the people will be assigned a new understanding from the Holy Spirit in their unique lives, according to the three dimensions of the checkerboard universes. And each frame of reference will be another co-creation story from the life of a soul projected from Heaven into the garden.

“Author, do you understand yet how this culture is currently shaping the individuals through the training of my trial of life as a game of love? The trial of each soul to endure such suffering alone, while together, there is a resilience of will to evolve together toward understanding my Son as their Messiah. His passion will be the centerpiece of each

church. And the community will have a passage from a courtyard into an understanding of their suffering. This is where the knowledge of me in Heaven will again attach my love through a collective passion through the testimony of Jesus Christ. And the strange loop, where all things unite together, from halves to a whole, will be understood and adopted as infinite love.

“Jesus was in the creation as a man, through which he was the divine spiritual reality of a heavenly understanding. And for the good of such creation, through which the Word became flesh, the women will understand the church. And in appreciation for her kingdom as a training ground of evil for good, the men will soldier onward through a garden in the courtyard and the royal throne room.

“Author, the collapse of my creation story is not an ending of the story for the Tree of Life. In the universal record system, which says my Son will come again as Messiah, the waves of the universes will become still. And time will become a discrete nothingness, in which all things will feel his presence as good and overwhelmingly all-powerful. Yet, life will be adapted in his growing spirit as a communion of faith within the sensemaking and emotional congruence found in each man and woman. For his timeless unity will overlap with all who are attracted to his powerful, loving mercy.

“And the evil that repulses his language, his words will strike fear into them. While all others obey his mastery of heavenly origins, the repulsed will acknowledge only his humanity. And their evil will be overcome by lessons and parables of training. And those who still repel the attractive radiance of Jesus Christ will forget their families as a connection

to the spiritual heavens. They will harden their hearts. And over time, they will fall so far into moral sleep that theirs will be a second death.

“Author, the Tree of Life is giving to the vines that flower around his love. And the spiritual kingdom will regain my balance. For it is that the unique creation story from my willingness in your wisdom to write will predict his ability to save all the good and holy of the church through his mercyfulness. And in welcoming the kingdom of a new Jerusalem back into his Heaven, the last of the behemoth of evil will leave the earth for a dark realm.

“It will take patience for your heart to understand and encourage her experience with the universal mind. And her pressure to train a man through social stories told will adapt her heart and his natural mind. For it is, that each is required to be understood for an equality between both halves to a whole.

“Respect and belonging will be adopted throughout my son Jesus’s passion. And his fulfillment of my relationship with my children on earth will realize their goodness through his eyes, mouth, ears, nose, and skin in sensemaking. And their spirits will collapse, and their tunnels of prayers will rejoin to a new board game. One in which a checkered past and future are not ideally positive or negative, but of an origin as neutrality harmonized as my reflection.

“The waters of the universes will crystallize, and the children whom my begotten Son adopts into Heaven through his love will resemble their evolved state of angels.

“And all will be remembered as a promise. All the memories of imbalance between two forces will be understood

through my reflected love. And the artwork and creation story will be my greatest gift as a Father. For it is my love that trains all those angels who forever stayed with my spirit to redeem the line of Adam and Eve.

“The beginning of the garden will then be an end of life on Earth, and the new Kingdom of Jerusalem will be the opposite half to that start. And all the life that is in memory is not only of a universal record system, but a collective ending to my story. Where it starts will be where the story begins to end.

“Author, the strange loop that you understand as two halves to a whole is an answer to a riddle with a question resembling the beginning. Once the story is understood by my angels, they can rejoice and live throughout life, conscious to realize my goodness and mercy. And those who failed to understand such goodness will be lost to that nothingness that was of a discrete time, personal to the frame of reference of the present.

“My eternal love will be of greatness for those who enjoyed my spirit as a collective harmony. The angels will continue to help aid in lifting anything else to an evolved awareness. And all that was, and is, and will be, is my begotten Son's. His love, laughter, and light are the ideal passionate knowledge. His love will be reconciled as my greatest accomplished co-creation story, turned creation story for all, ever after, and ever will be.

“His was, is, and will be my balance that binds your feminine and masculine nature.

“And this was what I promised to share in this story with you, Author. You have done well in writing this aspect of my

creation story, such that I will end your death with a renewed knowledge of that Tree of Life.

“When Sophia asked for a man to protect her through her spiritual prayers, you were dreaming under that Tree of Life. But that dream you had was not of her. And it was not of yourself, but of an angelic past, waiting to be realized for the greatness of my kingdom. And that was my fulfillment of a desire or aspect that you wanted to share with Sophia.

“To meet you would nourish her every need and bring satisfaction of awareness through a mystical binding called heavenly soulmates. But she did not tunnel into the projected plane to find you as you were absorbed in this riddle. The meeting in my art gallery was, to be honest, in the earthly dimension. You two were together there on Earth as part of my creation story, and in heavenly awareness of spirited love.

“Creation and co-creation, or whatever you may call my running words inspired together in your language, was merely to move you two together, closer to realizing me in both of your worldviews. Author, over time, she will understand how you came to me and obeyed me in that universal storytelling I called a universal mind. And from my graces, in which she trained many in a culture to fulfill my Son’s greatness, was my mercy, so that you and she would both understand the heavenly realm as angelic. And Adam and Eve, who were those who, understandably, fell through to the waters of the universes, will be the last understanding of my Son’s light. For he redeemed the world for all who accepted me. And to those lost in the seas of forgetfulness, theirs will be forgotten of love in my reflection. And the souls who col-

EQUILIBRIUM - ACROSS HEAVEN AND HELL 419

lapsed into my heavenly Son as a final judge will now be a part of my everything, my all, and my totality.”

Thanks be to God. Hallelujah!

Also by Todd M. Anderson

Equilibrium - Across Heaven and Hell

Art Gallery
New Jerusalem

Reflections on Faith

Believe
Connections
Garden of Harmonies
King and Prophet
Kingdom Building
Light Scholars
Never Give In
Paradise
Personality Program
Super Conscious
The Light and Filament
The Way of Man
Universal Records

Theater of Everyday Life

Mirrors for Reflection

The Anti-Personality

The Battle Between Good and Evil

Competitive

Angelic Wisdom

Trumpets Calling

Conversion of a Sinner

Angelic Identity

Standalone

Reflections on Faith

Theater of Everyday Life : A Christian Perspective

Equilibrium - Across Heaven and Hell

